

WITH PAIN COMES LOVE

.

.

01 – 6 years' back

It was November 15 and I had just gotten out of the exam room and met up with my two best friends talking about my epic party that was going to be held at our house. My friends Anita Ngubeni, Naledi Maqoma and I live in Naledi's home in La Lucia, she inherited the house from her late father; she's the richest in the squad and she was determined on giving me the best party that ever existed in the whole of Durban... or so she says. I'm no angel, I party, I drink, I smoke weed but I am however a smarty pants. Anita is the angel in the group, doesn't drink or smoke but she does go to parties with us after a lot of begging of cause and then there's Ledi; Is there anything she doesn't do or has not done? She's had her fair share of one night

stands, blessers, drinks, smokes cigarettes and weed, she's that friend my mom doesn't like much but tolerates her because I love her and she and I have been friends since we were 5. We met Anita when we were 10, she moved into our neighbourhood and she had no friends so Ledi and I befriended her and now we are the three musketeers. I on the other hand cannot be considered rich or poor, my mom works hard to give me the life I deserve. My mother is a Doctor and we get along in a normal mother daughter way. My friends and I study at DUT city campus. I study photography and arts, Ledi is an actress and Anita is doing dance as her major; she is the best dancer there is. She and Ledi share classes every now and then. We got to Ledi's car and drove off to Gateway to stock up some booze with the help of Anita's boyfriend Bonke whom we were meeting at Gateway. We met up with Bonke at the parking lot underground. Him and his girlfriend shared a

moment before him greeting us proper.

Him: how are you guys. Happy birthday Yaya

Me: thanks. Otherwise we good and yourself?

Him: also good. So is it only booze you guys need or?

Me: we've got the weed

Ledi: and ecstasy

Me: Ledi really? I thought I said no ecstasy

Ledi: yeah well I it's already been bought and its coming tonight

Me: what am I going to do with you?!

she just smiled. The last time I took ecstasy I landed up in hospital for 3 whole days and I vowed never to take it again. Well of cause mom found out and she wasn't happy about it at all but we got over it thank god.

Him: you are one naughty girl Naledi

Her: so I've been told

Ani: can we just get what we here for guys I've got major cramps

Me: does that mean you'll be sleeping in tonight?

Him: no babe you can't

Ledi: she wouldn't dare do us like that

Ani: relax would you. All I need is a young nap and then I'm good

Him: that's my girl

He kissed the side of her head and then we walked inside. The two love birds were walking behind us while Ledi and I were walking hand in hand looking like the hottest lesbians. Ledi is your typical beautiful yellow bone with expensive weave, big ass, skinny waist and beautiful fashion sense. I am not skinny and also not fat, I'm a size 30 basically with curves, my friends say I'm an hour glass, I'm not dark and I'm also not light, I also wear weaves but not on a regular basis, I have natural long hair

and then Anita is your Kelly Rowland, dark beauty, beautiful flawless skin, she has curves for days and has legs for days. Ledi and I were wearing blue jean bum shorts, long length ripped denim jacket, white vests and white superstars while Nita was wearing black jeans, white vest and a denim jacket with a white superstar. Nita doesn't wear short things, she pretty much hates them. We bought enough alcohol for the whole year and a lot of meat too and then we drove home. A few minutes later Bonke's friends rocked up and Nita went to take her nap upstairs while we prepared for the party and everything else. We weren't making a braai at the end of the day, it was a party with booze and meat and drugs. When we were done fixing the house up, Ledi went to lock the other rooms that weren't going to be used and we went to get dressed in my room, it was already past 6 and people were arriving.

Ledi: we look hot!

Me: don't we always?!

Her: let's take pictures

Me: I thought you'd never ask

We went to stand by the mirror and started taking lots and lots of pictures, she took pictures of me and I took some of her and dozens of selfies. Ledi was wearing a loose vest, blue jean bum shorts, and a white all-star. I was wearing a short black jumpsuit with lacey edges, it had long sleeves and my hair was tied in a loose bun and I was wearing a white platform heels with black detail. As we were walking out we bumped into Nita wearing a cute short white dress, well it was slightly above the knee which is quite an improvement from her of all people, she tied her hair up neatly and wore a navy wedge.

Me: well somebody is definitely getting laid tonight!

Ledi: yeah she is. You look hot! I'm glad you

finally saw the light

Nita: screw you guys!

Me: she swears too? Who are you and what have you done to our friend?

She laughed.

Her: you guys are so annoying!

Me: but you love us still. How are the cramps?

Her: better actually. The pills worked

Ledi: told you they would. Come let's take pictures

Nita: really guys

Me: it's my birthday

I pouted

Nita: its tomorrow dummy

Me: still. It's my party

Nita: fine. Let's take them then

We got inside my room and took more pictures.

We were slaying on another lever. When we were done we walked out and I locked and gave the key to Anita, I know that she's the only one that wasn't going to get sloshed. When we got downstairs Nita went to her boyfriend and my twinnie and I went to get ourselves some booze, the music was pumping and people were dancing and enjoying themselves. Every time we passed someone they would wish me a happy birthday or compliment me on the awesome party. Most people that were there were people we go to school with and some randoms I did not know. I got myself a bottle of hunter's gold and went out to the pool area leaving Ledi mingling with this other guy. I went to the stoners of cause. My classmates whom I smoke with were all chilling together with some girl I've only ever seen on campus, the chick was flames and these other two guys who were in their third year! I greeted everyone and sat on this other guy Sihle's lap.

Him: of all these people you choose me

Me: you know I love you the most

I kissed his cheek. You see Sihle is that friend that's deep inside the friend zone and never coming out. He's that guy people even think is gay because of how good he looks. We met at the beginning of the year and we've been tight ever since, not to say he's never tried his luck but he knows we'll never get anywhere.

Athi: you two should just date already

Chick: they not an item?

Siya: nope. He's deep in the friend zone

Me: I'm sorry we haven't met

I said to the girl

Her: Asemahle Bess

Me: as in Amahle and Damon Bess's daughter?

Her: yes.

Me: nice. I'm Yandiswa Gxaba

She nodded

Her: I know.

Siya: how come you never said that to me when we met

Me: because your parents may be the ish but Asemahle's run this world dude.

Tom: mahn she got you!

Siya: you clearly don't know who I am

Me: you are Siyabonga Nkohla, son of Siyanda and Zukisa Nkohla. Nephew of Sibusiso Ndaba and Sage Ndaba. Come on dude don't trip

Her: how do you guys know each other?

Me: he was the first guy who ever macked on me at DUT

Tom: you macked on her?

Siya: lies!

Athi: it's true. He just couldn't help himself

Her: your mom would be so disappointed. So you two never did anything?

Siya: I got into her pants

Me: he means he's still trying to

Her: what's the deal?

Sihle: well my friend over here has a rule. She doesn't do guys from her campus because it will cause awkward vibes

Her: why are you like my twin? He has the same rule

Siya: your twin's rules are screwed up thou!
Where will he meet girls if not on campus?

Her: clubs and other functions outside Howard

Tom: he and Yandi need to meet

Tom, Sihle and I were in the same class and then Athi and Siya were our seniors doing the same course but because we stoners we became friends. We all met this year but you

would swear I've known them for a very long time. Tom sits in front of Sihle and I in class and he just happened to like me and my art and Sihle, we met on our first day of school during break time; he was sitting alone and I felt pity for him and so I went to talk to him and we've been friends since. I met Athi and Siya on my first day of school after school when I was waiting for the girls by the gate.

Athi: that boy will die young. Surely Mama Bess is not happy with his lifestyle

Me: ok ok ok enough about your brother. I'm the birthday girl here, ya'll should be talking about me

They all laughed at me. Honestly I was just sick of hearing about this Bess brother I know nothing about. Well actually it's not that I don't know the guy but there's literally nothing about him on social media and I've never seen the guy's pictures ever. I mean the Besses are in

the spotlight but their kids aren't, I have Asemahle on my Facebook but I didn't think that she was Damon's daughter and it's my first time seeing her up close so you understand why it was a shock meeting her. I mean Miss Bess was at my party!

Sihle: that's the Yandi I know. Attention seeker for days

I smiled.

Me: come let's go dance. I'm high now

Athi: since when are you a light weight?

Me: since I'm drinking and I'm on my third bottle already

I pulled Sihle

Him: nah go without me mate

Her: I'll go with you

Me: you get awesome by the minute

We went to the dance floor and we started

dancing, she was a good dancer shocking enough. We were those girls on the dance floor, people had their eyes on us. I think she and I will be good friends if this was how she was outside campus. When we were tired we went to the bar to do some shorts. It was my 18th birthday meaning I was allowed.

“Melody I think that’s enough”

I turned to look at the person talking and good God he was flames. He had super dark hair, small eyes or my drunk eyes were deceiving me but this guy was flames. He was wearing a leather jacket, white t-shirt, black joggers and white sneakers. I couldn’t see him properly because he was standing on the other side of Asemahle and he had shades on. Who the hell puts shades on inside a house at night?

Her: Derrick I’m old enough

Him: then stop behaving like you not. This massive drinking needs to stop

Her: I'm sorry my brother is this rude. Yandiswa meet Derrick Bess

Me: hi

I waved my hand. He didn't respond, he just focused on his sister who was super dunk

Him: let's go home

Her: we didn't come here together Melo

Him: either you get up at freewill or I pick you up and put you on my shoulder and walk out with you

Me: can I say something?

I could feel his eyes pierce on my skin behind those shades he was wearing. There was something intimidating about him.

Him: talk

Me: I can take your sister up into my room until she sobers up

Her: yes. Yandiswa will look after me

Him: she's as drunk as you

Her: yes, but this is their place so I'm safe. Right Yandi?

I nodded. He looked at me for a while

Him: if anything happens to her I won't hesitate to hurt you!

I nodded creeped out. What was this guy's deal anyway? I was suddenly sober and not high anymore.

Me: let's go chill outside, its hot in here

Her: I'm sorry on behalf of my brother. He can be an ass at times

Me: it's no big deal

Her: don't let him intimidate you. He's a softie
-yeah right as if I buy that shiiit-

Me: sure he is. Let's just go

We walked out to the guys we were with before.

Sihle: buddy organise us some meat

Me: there's the braai over there mate

Ase: guess who just met the Mighty Derrick
Bess

Athi: no way? You?

He pointed at me.

Siya: and?

Me: he's terrifying!

They all laughed at me

Siya: that's cause you drunk and high

Me: I think I'm sober now

They all cracked up in laughter. Trust stoners to laugh at everything. We spoke for a while before me getting up to go get them this meat they asked for. I got 2 full plates and took them to where we were seated and we all dug in, mahn the meat was well done and it tasted good too. After chilling with my niggas I went to find my

bestie and I found her making out with some random guy from school, trust Ledi to make the most of a party.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:19] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

2-Melo

Seeing that I wasn't winning with my sister who drinks to the point of no return, I decided to stay at this party. It wasn't my scene but I was enjoying myself. These kids sure knew how to throw a party. My sister was chilling with Siya, Athi, Yandiswa and a group of other guys I did not know, they had ocurpipe in the middle and they also had drinks. Yandiswa was beautiful no

doubt, there was just something about her that made you want to know her but there was also something childish about her and I don't do kids. I am Melokuhle Derrick Bess, son of Amahle Ngesi Bess and Damon Bess. I am turning 20 this December and let me take you through the life of the great Amahle and Damon Bess's son. It's not as pretty as it looks you know but we deal anyway. I am a law student at UKZN Howard, the same place where my father studied his law and obtained his degree. I didn't study law because I wanted to but being the only boy amongst girls, I had no choice because who else is going to run BESS when my father dies? The surname Bess comes with dozens of burdens such that on my Instagram I am Melokuhle Ngesi to avoid any media interactions. My sister was not always a heavy drinker; she became this person after we lost our grandmother Bomi to a tragic death. She and grandpa Daniel died in a car crash on their

way to Mthatha after Iyana's birthday dinner, they died on the spot and things haven't been the same for me my siblings ever since. Mom didn't take it well but then who could blame her? She locked herself up until the funeral. It was very bad witnessing her go through that. The rest of my life you will hear as time goes by. I went inside to chill by the bar and minutes later I was joined by an old friend, Bonke.

Him: hey buddy

Me: hey what's up?

Him: I should be asking you that. You the one wearing shades indoors

Me: the son of Damon Bess needs to keep a low profile at all times

Him: your low profile will be the reason you die single and alone asshole

Me: hahaha how's the Mrs?

Him: she's great actually. Annoying at times but

great. When is the mighty Melo getting into a serious relationship?

Me: now I know you drunk when you start asking me shiit like that

He chuckled.

Him: what is it with you and relationships?

Me: look at the life you living and tell me that you really happy with the way things are

Bonke and Anita have been together for a year now and he has not once hit it, I say Anita has issues but my friend here loves her the way she is and funny enough; he has never not once cheated on her.

Him: I'm happy. I'm with the girl of my dreams

Me: and sex?

Him: sex is not that important in a relationship

Me: you only saying that because you not getting any. Any way things are working for you

the way they are buddy, let them work for me as they are

Him: I rest my case.

I laughed at him as he raised his hands up as a sign of defeat. This guy was rare to find; I hope Anita knew how lucky she was to have him. Bonke and I met at a club last year and we've been friends since. I like to keep my circle small meaning that I have a few friends and I don't do social networks, well I have Instagram and my account is private. Having seen what the media has put my parents through, I decided to limit my contact with the world. My only real friends are the people I grew up with; Siyabonga Nkohla, Lucas Bess (my cousin and partner in crime) and my siblings and other cousins. While we were drinking and talking Anita came to us, well her boyfriend.

Her: hey baby

She kissed him on his cheek. And then waved

her hand at me and I waved mine back

Him: Melo this is my girlfriend Anita; Nita this is Melokuhle

Her: nice to finally meet you Melokuhle

She said pulling her hand out and I shook it

Me: call me Melo. Everyone does

She smiled. Anita was a dark beauty, flawless skin and all. She was a straight up 10 and I did not even need alcohol in my system to notice that. They looked happy, for a split second I actually wanted what they had together but then again it disappeared when ii reminded myself of the things he wasn't getting in the relationship.

Him: what's up babe?

Her: I came to tell you that I am off to bed. These heels are killing me

Me: why do you girls wear those anyways? I mean this is your house right?

She nodded

Me: why not party in sneakers or something

BK laughed and so did she

Her: the aim is to look good at all times. In school my girls and I have a rep and we would like to maintain it at all times

Me: girls

Her: look at you. You indoors and you wearing shades

Him: that's because the might Derrick Bess wants to... uhhm what's the word again? Keep a low profile

Her: you Melokuhle Derrick Bess?

Me: you sound surprised?

Her: I am actually. What are you doing here?

Me: I don't understand

Her: you that guy

She clicked her fingers trying to think of a word to use

Me: rich guy?

Her: not the word I was looking for but it also works. You the kind of guy that attends serious parties and is always in the VIP section

Me: I have no idea where you got your information

Her: I don't mean it like that but I hope you get my point. This is a house party

Him: hahahaha she has you cornered bro

I chuckled. This girl was too hippy, in a good way. She looked all innocent and without sin, I didn't understand how her and Yandiswa were even friends.

Me: BK here invited me to come over and I figured why not?! I actually prefer house parties over clubs because at house parties' girls aren't trying so hard to get laid or trying to get niggas

buy them alcohol

Her: wow.

My vibrated in my pocket.

Me: not to be rude but point me to the bathroom please, I need somewhere quiet

Just then this Yandiswa chick appeared and came straight to Anita followed by my sister.

Her: honey bubu can I have my room key please

Anita gave it to her

Nita: Yandi please take Melo to a quieter place

She looked at me from head to toe before responding I could follow them. My sister was super sloshed, she was blabbing and saying things that made no sense at all. Yandiswa was quiet this whole time. We got to this room and she opened the door and led my sister to bed. The room was pretty actually with mirror closet.

Her: well the bathroom is over there

She pointed at a brown door, I thanked her and went inside. My phone had stopped ringing by the time. It rang again and I took it. it was mom which only made me worry

//Me: Boobie

Her: honey where are you?

Me: at a party. What's up?

Her: it's your sister. She's at the hospital

Me: what do you mean? Mom what are you talking about?

Iyana is engaged to this guy she went to school with and she is 4 months pregnant, she works at mom's company and she loves it there. Her future husband is an engineer. I was hoping and praying that my sister and her baby were ok. This is the last thing the family needs.

Her: honey please just come to the hospital and come with your sister if you can. I've been trying to call her but she hasn't been answering her

phone

Me: on my way mom//

I was worried about Iya. When she was 18, we learnt that her mother died while giving birth to her and that her mother sort of kind of raped our father. She didn't take it so well shame but she recovered with time and the right guy in her life. It did kind of put a dent on her relationship with our parents but eventually things worked out for the better because mom loved her regardless of how she came about. Having heard what mom and dad have been through together, it's the reason I figured relationships weren't for me. My surname is a blessing and a curse, it carries a lot of friends and a lot of enemies too and I wouldn't want to put anyone through that, hence I keep a low profile and stay away from relationships. I washed my face and then walked out of the bathroom. Yandiswa was sitting on top of the bed.

Her: everything ok?

Me: yeah. I have to go

Her: you sure everything's ok?

Me: just look after my sister please. I'll come fetch her in the morning

Her: rude much

She said rolling her eyes and opening the door for me and then she locked after me. I left her upstairs and rushed to my car and drove off to the hospital. When I got there mom, dad and Kungawo were in the waiting room looking all restless.

Me: where's lyana? is the baby ok?

Dad: where's your sister? I don't know. I tried calling her but I couldn't reach her

Mom got up to hug me.

Her: you've been drinking

Me: one or two beers

Her: you could have been arrested Melokuhle!

-here comes trouble-

Dad: we'll talk about this at home

Me: I'm sleeping at my apartment dad

Him: don't test me Derrick

Dad only ever called me Derrick when he was mad while mom called me Melokuhle and spoke in Xhosa when she was mad. I didn't understand why they were being so dramatic because I made her alive. I knew better than to argue so I just kept quiet and sat next to Ngawo

Me: she's going to be ok

Him: thanks

Just then a doctor walked up to us.

Him: uhhm hello everyone. I am doctor Mishka. I have just sedated your daughter Mr Bess; she should wake up fine

Me: and the baby?

Him: I'm so sorry. The baby didn't make it

Dad: what do you mean?

Him: she lost a lot of blood Mr Bess. There was nothing we could do to save the baby

Me: but what could have caused her to miscarry. I don't understand

Him: it could have been stress or other things such as strenuous activities...

Mom: but we came for a check-up just last week and you told us that everything was normal and in place

Him: I'm sorry Mrs Bess but there was really nothing I could do

Ngawo: can I see her?

He said softly with his voice breaking.

Dr: she's sleeping

Dad gave the guy that scary look of his that's almost compelling and the doctor added

“please come this way”

He left with Ngawo and I was left with my parents. Mom just sat down feeling hopeless and dad went to sit next to her to comfort her.

Her: they were doing so well, the baby was healthy and so was she. What went wrong Damon?

She said in between tears. You see my mom once had a miscarriage on the year my Bess grandparents died and she didn't take it so well, she needed therapy to get through the horror so for her daughter to go through what she went through; it was heart breaking. Mom has lost way too many people in her life, she has lost parents, grandparents, step parent, her in laws, her unborn baby, her best Friend-Iyana's mom and her high school friend Alex who died giving birth to her baby and they both never made it. so you see what I mean when I say she has lost a lot of people?! I applaud that woman because

she is very strong.

Dad: I wish I could answer you Boobie. I really do

Her: lyana is not strong enough to handle this Damon

Him: shhhh. We will help her get through this ok?

I was just sitting there not knowing what to do or say. I just wanted my sister to be ok, mom wasn't lying about lyana not be able to handle this, lyana is the same person who was once diagnosed with depression after finding out about her real mother so this was going to slip her right back into that dark phase of her life.

Me: we need to be strong for her mom

I brushed her back. She got out of dad's arms.

Her: and where the hell is Asemahle! Dammit!

I couldn't bust my twin; I know I was wrong but she was going to be in deep shiit if they knew where she was. It's not that the parents didn't

want us to party or anything but they wanted us to take it down a notch. Nothing that would taint the family name or embarrass any of them. After grandma and grandpa Hlathi's death, Melody was once diagnosed with alcohol poisoning and from thereon mom and dad told us to lay off of the booze. My sister on the other hand is the rebellious one, but as much as she can be rebellious, she doesn't drink on school days, she drinks heavily during holidays. We sat at the hospital until we were certain that Iyana was ok, well dad suggested that we come visit her tomorrow morning. When we got home everyone was too drained to argue-thank god-we all headed to our rooms and I went to pack up Asemahle things to change for tomorrow. I wasn't going to go with the parents to the hospital, I was going to make up a lie so that I can take Mahle's things to her before we head to the hospital.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:20] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

3

I woke up to my phone ringing none stop, I checked the screen and doctor Gxaba's picture showed up, I looked at the time and it was 6am. I slept at 4am because I was too busy cleaning with my friends and making sure that everyone was gone. I was hesitant to answer but I answered anyway

//” happy birthday to you.... Happy birthday to you. Happy birthday dear Yandiswa. Happy birthday to you. How old are you now?... how old are you now? How old are you now? How old are you now?... hip-hip hooray. Hip-hip

hooray.”

Me: I'm 16 again. Morning Dr Gxaba

Her: hey what happened to being called mom

Me: when have I ever called you that?

Her: whatever. Morning to you too baby, how are you?

Me: hungover and how are you?

Her: you know I don't want this thing of you drinking!

Me: really mom we doing this? Now?

Her: when are you coming home. I know you done writing

Me: I'll be back next month on the 15 mom.

Her: No Yandiswa I need you back home. I have a conference I need to attend

Me: then leave the key at Anita's home, I'll fetch it there

Her: no Yandiswa why are you being like this

Me: mom it's my birthday. Can we do this another time please//

Mom tried calling me again but I just switched my phone off and woke up to pee. Melody Bess over here was still sleeping. When I got out of the bathroom I went downstairs to cure my hangover. I bumped into Bonke carrying 2 bowls of cereal heading out the kitchen in nothing but briefs. He was shocked to see me as much as I was shocked to see him too. The guy was hot I have to admit. He had those Rugby player bodies, but then again this guy played rugby back in school at Dale in King Williams Town-Eastern Cape.

Me: well morning.

Him: morning

He looked embarrassed and I couldn't hold back the laughter.

Him: I should go

Me: not so fast

I pushed him inside the kitchen.

Him: what?

Me: so how was it?

Him: how was what?

Me: I know you broke Anita's virginity. How was it?

Him: we are so not discussing this

Me: I'm just curious. My friend has been a virgin her whole life and then suddenly you rock up and you break her, I want details. How did you convince her?

Him: I didn't convince her, she convinced me

Me: mmmmh I see.

Him: can I go now?!

Me: You still haven't answered one question.

How was it? I hope you didn't screw her brains out

Him: I made love to her. Relax. It was great, the wait was worth it

Me: Bonke if you dare bounce I will murder you with my own bare hands

Him: geeez

Me: Bonke I'm serious.

Him: I love Anita. Relax

Me: that had better be true or else I will saw your balls together without even blinking

Him: I'm out of here. You are creepy!

With that he walked out laughing. Just as I was about to take out cold water from the fridge there was a knock on the door. I drank the pills in my hand and went to answer the door. Before me stood the most handsome guy I have ever seen in Durban. His cologne smelled familiar though, he was wearing shades... it then clicked.

Melokuhle Bess...

Me: its 6am. What do you want?

Him: aren't we rude?

Me: I learn from the best

I said sarcastically. I walked to the cupboard to take out cereal.

Him: I'm sorry for my behaviour last night

Me: yeah whatever!

I turned with my bowl and found him standing so close to me that you could actually hear my heart beat. this time he had taken his shades off. He had his father's eyes that's for sure, they were perfectly shaped and his pupils were brown. He was wearing a vest which showed off his tattoos on his one arm and another on the side of his chest. The one on the arm was tiny birds and I couldn't tell what the one hidden by the vest was. He smelled so damn good. He was carrying an overnight bag. He took some

cereal from my bowl and put it in his mouth and then walked away from me.

Him: you have good taste in cereal

I just looked at him. Why was this guy so intimidating? And this is coming from someone who's not even intimidated by her lectures or mom.

Me: your sister is in my room sleeping

Him: then go wake her up. I don't have all day

Me: you must think I'm one of the dozen servants at the Bess mansion huh? You came for your sister; you go wake her up! If this is how you speak to your servants at the Bess residence, then I feel sorry for them. You don't deserve them!

He looked at me in shock. I was mad that he would treat a stranger like that. One thing about me is I hate snobs. Naledi maybe one but she has respect. I poured cold milk and then sat

down, he was still looking at me. I prefer my milo cereal with cold milk. He looked at me one more time before walking out, bumping into Naledi on his way out. She came to me all smiles and checked the coast first before talking.

Her: who the hell was that?

Me: morning to you too

Her: morning honey boo. Now who was that yumminess?

She said taking a spoon full of my cereal

Me: get your own idiot

Her: now why would I do that? He is hot by the way

Me: that is Melokuhle Bess. He's an asshole!

Her: just the way you like them buddy

Me: what? Hell no I would never be with that guy in a million years. I would rather die than be

with him

Her: yep. You like him. So what is Mr Bess doing here? At our place?

Me: to fetch his sister.

Her: last night was that epic huh? To be graced by the Bess twins! Wow!

Me: you sure know how to host a party my friend

Her: we!

Me: so who did you win last night?

Her: hahahaha I don't kiss and tell.

She said imitating zipping her mouth

Me: you know you want to spill. Is he still in your room?

Her: he left ages ago sweetie. It was some rich boy who's in town for the weekend and he wants to have a good time. He even offered to sponsor tonight's dinner party

Me: no. we not doing that

Her: too late. He booked us in at ICC Arena.
He's a guy here on business and I won't ever
have to see him again

Me: I don't know why I love you but dammit!

She kissed my cheek.

Her: just say thank you and tell me I'm the best
that's ever lived.

She said walking to the cupboard to make
herself something to eat

Me: so how old is this one?

Her: 28

Me: car?

Her: Porsche

Me: nice. Watch?

Her: Rolex baby.

Me: so what? Is he your new blesser?

Her: for the weekend. My word his cologne!

Me: so where is he from?

Her: he's from LA. He works in marketing for a living, he's always on the road

Me: I see.

“what do you see?”

Anita walked in wearing a robe with super messy hair.

Me: nothing. so how was last night? Or this morning? Or both

Her: what are you talking about?

Ledi: no way! No flipping way!

Nita: what are you guys talking about?

Ledi: you had sex

Nita: what?

Ledi: it's pretty obvious. Did you guys use a condom?

I don't know how Naledi does it but even when I lost my virginity she knew, I didn't have to say anything, she just knew

Nita: how do you know?

Ledi: I just know. details

Nita: you guys never told me that a D was that big

Me: that's because we didn't know Bonke's was.

Ledi: the bigger the better baby.

Nita: it was so painful and the condom wasn't making things any better

Me: yeah well with time you guys are going to lose the condom and it will be the best ever

Her: next time? I'm never having sex again!

Ledi and I looked at each other and laughed our asses off.

Her: what?

Me: honey that's what we all said after our first

time.

Ledi: when you do stop using the condom please go on contraceptives. The last thing we need is you falling pregnant

Nita: I told you guys, I'm never doing it again

Me: but you enjoyed it?

She smiled and covered her face with her hands.

Ledi: damn right she did. Our little birdy has finally left the nest. Welcome to Hoe Ville

Me: no Naledi. She won't end up like you!

And just as we were laughing and chatting up a storm, Melokuhle Bess's cologne filled the room. He walked in empty handed.

Him: morning's

Nita: did you sleep here?

Him: nope, I came this morning to bring my sister some clothes to change

Nita: aren't you the sweetest. Have you met my

friends? This is Naledi and this is Yandiswa

Ledi smiled and waved and he waved back while I finished up my cereal. Nita gave me a stare

Me: we already met

Her: I hope you played nice

Me: you should be directing that to him. He's the rude one

I stood up and went to wash my bowl in the sink, he was standing in the way.

Me: excuse me

He moved aside.

Me: thanks.

Ledi: so Mr Bess, any girlfriend?

Him: hahaha uhhm why do you ask?

Ledi: answer me first and then I'll answer you

Him: I don't do relationships.

I could feel his eyes pierce right through my skin.

Ledi: why?

Him: answer me first and then I'll answer you

I chuckled. Was this guy for real?

Ledi: you got me. I'm just curious that's all. Now why?

Him: they are a waste of time

Nita: funny for you to say that because that's what Yandiswa also believes

Him: I see

Me: I never said they were a waste of time. I only said dating or screwing on campus was a waste of time

Him: so you don't have a boyfriend?

Ledi: she's as single as the word. Her last boyfriend

Me: he does not need to know about my

personal life! Thank you very much

Ledi: but it's an interesting story.

Me: Naledi No

Nita: lets drop it Ledi please

Ledi: fine!

She rolled her eyes. Walked out and went to my room to wash. I found Asemahle getting dressed, her dress was just plain beautiful. This girl had style for days

Me: love the dress

Her: thanks. It was a birthday present from my brother

Me: he has great taste

She smiled.

Me: everything ok? You look like you've been crying

Her: my sister had a miscarriage

Me: I am so sorry.

Her: yep so am. Thanks for letting me crash here, you're a cool chick

Me: thank you. I'm really sorry about your sister
She smiled and nodded.

Her: what's your number?

I called it out for her and she punched it in her phone.

Her: thanks

Me: you welcome.

Her: this December is our birthday and I'd like for you to come through

Me: uhhhm thank you

Her: you're a cool chick

Me: you too. I'd love to come.

Her: well I'll text you all the details when everything has been finalised ok?

Me: yeah sure. Thanks

Her: I should go and deal with why I was unreachable last night

Me: sorry

Her: it's cool. Is my brother still here?

Me: in the kitchen downstairs

Her: awesome. By Yandiswa I hope to see you soon

Me: I'm sure you will

With that she walked out with her things and headed downstairs. I took my clothes off and went to shower first before making my bed. When I was done I brushed my teeth and did the necessary then walked to my room, still naked. Melokuhle walked in pressing his phone

Him: I am so sorry

Me: knock much?

I quickly turned around covering my assets. He

threw a towel at me and I bent down to pick it up, still not looking at him. I wrapped it around my body and then turned to look at him

Him: nice ass and boobs

Me: what do you want?

Him: I forgot my shades.

Me: take them and leave

He scanned my room and went to the dressing table and took them.

Him: you need not be ashamed of your body, its perfect

Me: get out please

He walked out with a naughty smile. Mr Bess had a very nice smile. I went to lock my door as soon as he got out.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:20] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES
LOVE*

.

.

4-Melo

If Yandiswa does not have the best boner giving body, then I don't know who does! She's an hour glass, curves and all. Her boobs are the most prettiest boobs I have ever seen! Everything about her is just beautiful. I would love to tap that that's for sure. I got into the driver's seat all smiles thinking about the good show I just had. One thing I didn't like about Yandiswa was her attitude. It really stinks. She was annoying in a not so cute way even. I started the car, I was driving mom's Aston Martin which she didn't drive anymore anyway.

Ase: how'd you get her to borrow you the keys?

Me: she's vulnerable so she'll do anything to get

me out of her hair

Her: lucky you. Favourite child

Me: you know that's not true. So what's your lie going to be this time?

Her: tell her I was sleeping over at a friend's house and my phone was off

Me: you think they going to buy it?

Her: daddy will. He always does

Me: alcohol is the reason dad confiscated your keys Melody

Her: please not now Derrick.

Me: you need to quit this excessive drinking

Her: I only drink occasionally, chill

Me: you know the parents don't want you drinking at all and I'm started to agree with them.

Her: when have I ever done anything stupid when drunk?

Me: still Asemahle. Tone it down

Her: I make no promises.

I parked the car and we got off and went inside the hospital. We asked for Iyana's ward and the nurse told us. We walked in and she was facing the other side and the parents and Ngawo were sitting there not knowing what to do.

Us: mornings

Mom gave Asemahle a death stare. She was in trouble that's for sure. Asemahle walked over to where Iyana was facing and she hugged her so tight. These two were the best of friends, funny enough when they were little they didn't get along for a single bit and now they inseparable.

Ase: sis I'm so sorry

She said with tears. Iya just cried in her arms. It was not a nice view, seeing my big sister like that. I've never lost a child but I see how painful it is and I hope and pray that I never go through

that.

Mom: we will get through this together as a family

She brushed Iyana's back. We all sat there in silence.

Me: when are they discharging her?

I asked Kungawo, we were both standing by the window

Him: the doctor said probably tomorrow. He still needs to make sure that everything is fine

Me: I'm really sorry mahn

Him: I just wish I could take her pain away you know

Me: yeah I know because that's exactly how I feel.

Him: she was fine when she went to bed. No cramps, no nothing and then suddenly in the middle of the night she wakes up crying and

there's blood on the bed. I just don't understand
I don't know how to comfort someone,
especially a man!

Me: everything happens for a reason bro. sure
we don't know what that reason is but God
doesn't take and not give back blessings that
are 10x more

Him: why get us so excited for this blessing if
he was planning on taking it away from us huh?
Hasn't she been through enough already?

I was tongue tied. I'm not a man of many words,
never been even so at this moment I did not
know how to comfort him and tell him it's going
to be ok. I know I was only 5 when my
grandparents died but I saw what it did to my
mom, their death and her unborn child's death.
Not a pretty sight, nothing anyone ever said to
her made her feel any better; I think if she didn't
have me and my siblings, she probably would
have never gotten through the pain. The

difference between her and Iyana is that Iyana doesn't have any kids and the very first one she was supposed to have is the same one she's lost. I don't know how she'll get through this because nobody but her understands her pain. I turned to look at my sister who was in bed with my twin. Dad was gone, probably went to handle some business or something.

Iya: I want to go home. When are they releasing me?

Mom: tomorrow baby

Iya: why are they keeping me here? The baby is gone, shouldn't I be allowed to go home now?

Ngawo: they doctor said he needs to make sure that everything was fine with you before releasing you

Iya: I feel fine. I just want to go home

Ase: just one more day Yana and you'll be home

Iya: I don't see the need for me to be here when

there's nothing that requires me to be here. My baby is gone and he or she is never coming back

Ase looked at mom defeated.

Mom: your womb still needs to be cleaned honey to avoid any infections.

Iya: then what are they waiting for? Mom please

Her: ok baby. I'll go get your doctor

With that mom walked out and left is with Iya. I went to sit where mom was sitting.

Me: hey you

Her: hi.

Me: I'm sorry

Her: please Derrick. Not you too. I've heard enough of those to last me eternity

I kept quiet not knowing what to say.

Her: anything new?

Me: like?

Her: I don't know. a girl or something. Anything that will get my mind of this. please

Ase: I made a friend last night

Iya: yeah? Where?

Ase: some house party I went to with Siya

Iya: don't let mom hear you

Just then Mrs Bess walked in followed by Iyana's doctor. Mom was beautiful, she was like fine wine. She hasn't aged one single bit and this woman was 42, she looked younger than people in their 30's. Dad was 46 and he also hadn't aged, I wished to acquire their genes of not aging. But then again look at my siblings, they don't look a day over 20; Melody still looks 16 and Iyana looks 18, apparently I looked 18 too and I'm turning 20.

Him: you're awake

Iya: I want to go home

Him: I can't discharge you just yet

Iya: my fiancé told me everything. When will my womb be cleaned?

Him: you are scheduled for today at 4

Iya: and how long will that take?

Him: not that long

Her: then why can't you discharge me today later

Him: because after the process you will need lots of sleep and medication

Her: and is this medication only available in this hospital?

Him: we can write a prescription letter b...

Her: then write me a prescription letter. I don't want to have to spend another night here

The dr looked at mom and she nodded and with that he scribbled something on my sister's notepad and he walked out. I felt sorry for the

poor guy.

Mom: you will need to take it easy for the next few days

Her: if you mean me taking leave from work then you must be joking

Mom: I'm not going to argue with you on this lyana

Iya: mom I will go crazy sitting in my apartment alone

Mom: who said that's where you going?!

Iya: what?

Mom: you are coming home and it's not open for discussion.

The Mrs has spoken. Iyana sat there and sulked. We all knew better than to argue with that tone, she wasn't loud but her voice was firm and authoritative. There was no use fighting with Mrs Bess when she was like that. A nurse came in and told us that Iyana needed to wash and that

we may come and see her again after 8am.
Mom suggested we go out for breakfast but Ngawo said he wasn't going anywhere and so we let him be. We went to Gateway; it wasn't far from the hospital. Mom parked her car and we went to spur, they got us a table for 4 because dad was on his way. Asemahle and I were sitting opposite mom.

Mom: where were you last night?

Ase: I was at a sleep over. Thought I texted you

Mom: then why was your phone off? Don't phone get answered at a sleepover?

Ase: my battery was flat. I only charged it this morning

Mom: you must think I'm stupid huh. I'm not your father whom you can flap those tiny lashes and expect him to believe you

Ase: bu..

Mom: I thought I told you to quit alcohol or you

move back home

Ase: what? You can't do that

Mom: you forget that your father and I pay for everything you own Melody. I warned you what would happen if you didn't stop. Wasn't being hospitalised enough?

Asemahle attempted to get up but mom held her arm and pulled her back to her seat.

Mom: try that again and I will slap the daylights out of you

Just then dad joined us. –thank god- normally I would stick up for my twin but not this time around, Mrs Bess was not to be messed with. Mom is not strict but when you disrespect her, she shows you flames.

Dad: what's going on here?

He kissed his wife's cheek

Mom: your daughter was out drinking last night. That's why we couldn't reach her and her

brother knows where she was.

I don't know how she knew that

Dad: Melody is that true?

She looked down. A waiter came to take our orders and he walked away.

Dad: seeing that you clearly don't listen to us, you moving back home until you learn to listen and obey.

She didn't argue, she just nodded her head.

Mom: and until I see change, your party is off!

Me: what? Mom you can't do that!

Mom: maybe it will teach you tell the truth at all times. We not stupid, we raised you. We know all your tricks, how you always cover up for your twin. You did that even when you were kids

Melokuhle

Me: mom please. I'm sorry

She kept quiet and went through her phone.

Me: dad?

Him: I enter nowhere!

Just as we were sitting like that in silence with only our parents conversing, Yandiswa walked in with a lady slightly older than her and they looked alike too. If I'm correct, it's her mother, she looked young thou. She was wearing high-rise skinny jeans with an oversized crop top, she looked pretty in it and her hair was untied. I watched her make her way to a table with this woman watched them take their seats. This girl was not out of this world beautiful but she was hella beautiful.

Mom: Melokuhle

She said snapping her fingers in front of me

Me: Ma

Her: what are you looking at anyway?

She tried to turn but she couldn't see who I was looking at.

Me: nothing mom. You were saying?

Dad: next week I'm going to a seminar in Joburg. Interested in coming?

Me: do I have a choice?

Mom: really? It will be good for you, plus your father is the guest of honour

Me: then there's no reason for me to go, he can tell me now what he will be saying there

Mom: hahaha very funny Sphe. You are going anyway, it will be a great opportunity for learning and you can invite your friends

Me: why isn't it held here?

Dad: because all the right places here were fully booked. The next one will be held here next year though

Me: I see.

Ase: so where are you guys going for holidays this year

Dad: we as a whole family are going to wherever you guys want us to go

Ase: I want to go to New Orleans.

Mom: that's where we went for our honey moon when I was still pregnant with you guys

Ase: and is it as awesome as The Originals paints it out to be?

Mom: yes, but vampires, werewolves and witches don't exist

We all laughed

Ase: I'm not a kid mom. I know that those things don't exist. I meant the festivals they host, are they real?

Dad: yes, they are and they are very nice. It's a great place to be in. Melo what do you say?

Me: I want to go to Amsterdam.

Dad: ha ha ha so what? You can get high freely?

Me: no. I just find the place pretty that's all

Mom: it truly is a beautiful place with its many places to see and all

Dad: we'll vote on it when the whole family is together

One thing I like about my family is that we don't dwell on something, you get mad and you get over it because no one begs you, everyone's life continues whether you mad or not so its best you stop pouting and join in on the fun. You see my family has this thing we normally do every December, we pick a holiday destination and go spend the holidays there and come back a few days before Christmas because that's a family holiday and I time to be with loved ones and then after Christmas they let us go wherever we want. It's always been like that ever since high school. Apparently it's what used to happen with them and their parents before we were born they passed it on to us. Only we only ever travel to places around South Africa with our own saved up cash and a little bit extra from

them.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:20] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES
LOVE*

.

.

5

So my mom rocked up in front of our door step... As usual... she didn't say she was coming or whatsoever, on my birthday she always takes me out. I thought this thing of hers would have ended with me studying in Durban and all but nope, Dr Gxaba doesn't role like that. Of cause I was happy to see her even though we had a session this morning but still, I missed her and she's my mummy dearest. We went out to Gateway Spur for breakfast and the waitress led

us to a table for two.

Me: you look beautiful

Her: thank you baby, you not so bad yourself

Me: oh come on don't be like that

Her: you know I don't like these crop tops you wear

Me: but mom jean covers my belly. Chill

Her: fine. Do you know that guy over there?

Me: what guy?

Her: the one that's had his eye on you the minute we walked in

Ok I was suddenly worried. I mean what if it's my ex, the idiot that broke my heart after being together for 4 years. I turned around to search for someone I could recognise and I was met by Melokuhle's gaze, he quickly looked away when he saw me see him.

Me: oh him

Her: he's cute

Me: we are so not doing this

Her: what?

Me: you my mother and I'm not going to discuss boys with you

Her: do you at least know him?

Me: yes. He walked in on me naked this morning

Her jaw dropped

Me: relax. We didn't do anything, he and I don't even know each other well. I met him at my party last night and he's a jerk. This morning he came to fetch his sister at our place and he happened to have forgotten his shades on my dressing table. So relax

Her: I've told you countless times to go with a big towel when you go shower

Me: yeah but I don't do it anyway because I

believe in this thing called knocking which he didn't do

Her: still. Whether the room is yours or not, always wrap a towel around your body. You never know what might happen

Me: I'm not making any promises but I'll try it out.

Her: I don't know whose child you are shame I smiled.

Me: you know exactly who.

Her: whatever.

Our waitress brought our orders and we started eating. I excused myself to go pee and when I got to the loo I met Asemahle

Her: hey you. You clean up pretty well

Me: hey you. Thanks, just tryna keep up with you

Her: so who did you come here with?

Me: my mom. You?

Her: the whole family except my sister

Me: how is she?

Her: not good. This is taking a toll on her

Me: I can only imagine. Again I'm sorry for your loss

Her: no biggie. So where are you and your mom sitting?

Me: actually not too far from you guys

Her: how do you know where we sitting?

Me: I saw your brother

Her: so that's who he's been looking at.

Me: uh-hm ok... I need to pee

Her: this conversation is not over Missy

What's the deal? Why was Melokuhle "looking" at me? He's already seen me naked, what more does he want? I did my thing and then walked

out and Asemahle was still there looking admiring herself in the mirror

Me: you still here

Her: I was waiting for you actually. You've caught my brother's attention

Me: yeah well he's the one that walked in on me naked so

Her: wait what? When?

Me and my big mouth. I thought she knew

Me: I thought you knew

Her: I want details

Me: there are no details. He just said I have a nice body, nice boobs and nice ass

Her: mmmmh...

Me: what?

Her: nothing.

Me: right. Let's get out of here before

somebody comes looking for one of us

She laughed. She would look at me and just laugh. I was kind of annoyed really.

Her: come let me introduce you to my parents

Me: no way!

Her: yes, way. Come

She pulled my arm and dragged me to their table. Melokuhle's stare was making me very uncomfortable, it wasn't a pervey look but it was that intimidating scary look that sent electric impulses to my body.

Her: mom, dad this is my friend Yandiswa Gxaba. Yandi this is my mother Amahle and my dad Damon Bess

Me: nice to meet you

I shook their hands

Them: nice to meet you.

Ama: you don't happen to be related to Dr

Babalwa Gxaba?

Me: she's my mother. How do you know her?

Her: we met at my friend's funeral and again at a conference

Ase: she's actually here with her mom

Ama: where are you guys sitting?

I pointed to our table and she asked her husband to get out to go and greet my mom. I followed right behind her. The two greeted each other like they were the best of friends.

Mom: how are you?

Ama: I'm good. My god it's been forever, you look amazing

Mom: thank you. Not as well as you though

Ama: hahaha don't flatter me. I'm with my family over there

Mom: finally, I get to meet the other Bess's

Ama: sadly, one of them is in hospital

Mom: what happened? Which one?

Ama: Iyana. she had a miscarriage

Mom: I'm so sorry. How is she?

Ama: not good

Mom: I can only imagine.

She got up and they went to the Bess table. I just sat there and logged onto Facebook. I came across a picture of my ex and I, he had tagged our closest mutual friends. He captioned it something like "it's been a great 4 years Yands. Wishing you all the best with you fo.... happy birthday Yands" I didn't even finish reading the caption, I went straight to the comments; it was posted about 30min ago and already it had over a 100 likes and about 10 comments. What pissed me off the most was him publicly displaying that he and I were over on flipping Facebook! I went through my phone and called his friend/roommate, last time I checked the guy didn't have a phone so the only

person I could reach him on was his friend
Thato.

//Thato: hey Yandi

Me: hi. Can I speak to Zuko?

Him: buddy is everything ok?

Me: please just give Zuko the phone

Him: uhhm ok hold on.

I heard a bit of communication and then “hello”

Me: Zuko what the hell?

Him: Yands oh my gosh. Hey how are you?

Me: I never thought you would stoop this low!
Seriously? A public announcement that you free
now

Him: uhhm Yands I don't know what you talking
about

Me: the picture on Facebook dammit. Remove it!

Him: it's on my Facebook, I don't see where the

big deal is

Me: it may be on your Facebook but I am in it.
remove it Zuko.

Him: fine whatever. //

I dropped the call. I was so mad. What witchcraft was this? I mean this guy tagged our mutual friends because he knew it would make its way to me somehow. I don't recall hating anyone as much as I hated him at that time. I wanted nothing to do with him and so help me god when we get to Mthatha I am going to show him just how good I am doing without him. I wanted to go home but mom was too busy chatting up a storm with Mrs Bess, trust mothers to do such. I called my partner in crime, Naledi.

//Her: miss me already

Me: friend log onto your Facebook now

Her: why? What's wrong?

Me: its Zuko! He tagged you in a picture.

Her: ok hold on let me find my tab. What did he do friend? You literally spitting fire right now

Me: gosh he makes me so mad!

Her: he did what? That asshole

Judging by her response, she saw the picture

Her: what an asshole! I am going to chop his balls of I swear! After everything he's put you through, he goes on does this?! I can't believe you ever dated this guy.

Me: you and me both friend

Her: at least you never had sex with him so that counts for something. He's a bitter ex friend don't let him spoil your day

Me: I just wish he could leave me the hell alone
Naledi

Her: honey Boo I need you to just breathe. Take a deep breath in and let it out

I did as told and I could feel myself getting calm.

Me: thanks

Her: I'm always here. I will deal with him don't worry

Me: nah friend let it slide, I don't want him to know he got to me

Her: yeah well he needs to know that he got to you. What he did is childish AF! Just enjoy your breakfast with mommy dearest and we'll talk proper when you get home ok?

Me: argh if only... that one is busy chatting up a storm with Mrs Bess

Her: Amahle Bess? How do they know each other?

Me: they met at a mutual friend's funeral and then again at a conference

Her: oh wow. Does this mean that you and Melokuhle can't date? Seeing that your mother's are friends?

Me: even if they weren't friends. I told you, the guy is an ass

Her: perfect for you

Me: screw you!

her: I love you honey boo

Me: I don't. bye now, she just remembered she came here with me

She laughed.

Her: you crazy. Enjoy ok

Me: I love you honey boo//

Mom: somebody has a boyfriend

She said smiling like she had just saved a dying patient.

Me: no. I was talking to Naledi

Her: oh

Her expression suddenly changed.

Her: that child is bad news

Me: you the one that made me befriend her
thou

Her: when you guys were 5. I didn't think she
would turn out like this

Me: losing her father made her like this mom.
Don't judge

Her: whatever. Uhhm can I settle the bill or you
still want something else?

Me: you can settle the bill, I lost my appetite

Her: so you don't want a doggy bag?

Me: nope

Her: ok.

She waved her hand to our waitress and the girl
came over and took away our plates and said
she would bring the bill in a bit.

Her: so where do you want to go shopping?

Me: you can always transfer me the cash

I said smiling

Her: nice try. We are going to bond whether you like it or not

Me: I don't mind as long as by 5 we'll be done bonding

Her: what? Why?

Me: my friends are taking me out for my birthday

Her: oh that's nice of them. Where?

Me: some club

Her: don't you get tired of this whole clubbing business?

Me: nope, I didn't get the time to during the year mom

Her: where is your grandmother when I need her

Me: back in Mthatha

I said smiling.

Her: heh, did you know that your Solethu is pregnant

Solethu is my cousin, she's those cousins you have no idea how you two are related but because your parents say you cousins then you automatically become their cousin

Me: I did not know

Her: prepare for a Life Orientation lecture from your granny when you go back home

Me: Jesus Christ! Why should I have to suffer all because she doesn't know how to use a condom

Her: and do you know?

Me: I'm still a virgin Babes

Her: with the lifestyle you leading. I don't buy that one single bit

Me: I may party, drink but I am still a virgin mom

You guys need to understand that I'm lying for her own good, the last thing I need is her picturing me having sex.... Not a good image for a mother to have. On the real though, I lost my

virginity last September holidays. Me being a virgin was the reason Zuko and I even broke up. He agreed to ending things all because I wouldn't sleep with him. He expected me to lose my virginity this past April holidays but I had other plans. You'll hear the story proper with time. Oh and the whole "rule" of mine of not screwing people I go to school with, and also I do not date people I go to the same campus with for obvious reasons. My life plans did not include me losing my virginity before I turned 18 but life has a funny way, I think I might as well hoe around this December. Blame Zuko!

Her: if you say so

Me: you don't believe me

Her: it's kind of not easy to

Me: I'm your daughter, you suppose to take my word for it mom

Her: ok fine. Is that why you and Zuko broke up?

Me: what are you talking about?

Her: you and your ex, did you guys break up because you're a virgin?

I nodded

Her: what an asshole!

Me: language mom

We were walking out of Spur and headed to Legit while chatting about this whole thing, I was uncomfortable talking about this with my mom so I changed the topic to her anything but me and she fell for it because we were now talking about school.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:20] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

6-Melo

So I was right, that is her mom... I see where she gets everything from, her mom was a looker and they looked like copies of each other. Talk about doppelgangers. There was something mesmerizing about Yandiswa, something about her that made you stare. I didn't want to know her, I wasn't even interested in her but I did want to bang the daylights out of her and that was going to happen at our party one way or the other. Sure Mrs Bess said it was cancelled... for now. But I know which buttons to stroke on my mom. Mom bought Iya and Ngawo breakfast and then we headed back to the hospital, seeing that my sister was going home today I didn't really see need to be there. I made up some lie and then headed out to meet up with Athi and Siya, I needed some sanity. They were chilling at Rocco Mama's

Athi: dude what's up with your phone?

Siya: been tryna call you since forever

Me: why are ya'll sounding like that annoying girlfriend

Siya: and you would know right?

Me: screw you bro. last night was lit

Athi: those girls sure know how to throw a party!

Siya: and you scared the birthday girl. made her go sober same time

We all laughed

Me: what do you mean I scared the birthday girl? who was the birthday girl again?

Athi: Yandiswa! She called you terrifying!

Siya: what did you do to the girl?

Me: nothing

I shrugged. I didn't mean to scare her off but if anything had happened to my sister then I

would be the one to blame, my parents would take everything out on me and that was the last thing I needed. I love my twin, annoying as she can be at times but she and I are one! Whatever happens to her, happens to me too, if she hurts then I hurt and if she's happy then so am I. I would die before I let anything happen to her.

Athi: you know we don't believe your ass right

Me: maybe I threatened her

Siya: what do you mean maybe?

Me: told her if she let anything happen to my sister then I would hurt her

Athi: Dude! No!

Me: what?

Athi: Yandiswa is not some floozy drunkard, she's actually a very sweet smart girl who would never and I mean never let anyone take advantage of someone she cares about

Me: she only met my sister last night. I don't

think you can care about someone you don't know

Siya: she can, she doesn't need to know you long enough to care. Look at your mom for instance

Me: my mom doesn't drink or smoke nor is she rude

Athi: she'll be rude to you only if you were rude to her first

Me: why are we even talking about this girl? do you guys have a thing for her?

Siya: in all honesty, I once did but she put me in the friend zone on some screwed up rule like yours

Athi: why you getting worked anyway? Aint like you know her

Me: I was at her place just this morning and she was rude AF! I want nothing to do with her

Siya: I see where this is going. You like her

Athi: flip! Why didn't I see it sooner?

Me: what? No! Fuck No!

Siya: she's beautiful, has a banging body for days and she's more or less like you. You like her

Me: she's nothing like me

Athi: ok at least admit that she has a banging body

Me: I saw her naked actually

Siya: no way!

Athi: you kidding right?

Me: I wish. Her body is an instant boner giver

Siya: please don't "Melo" her

My friends call my strategy of screwing and then bouncing without catching any feelings, the 'Melo'. As you guys know already, I don't do relationships and like I said, I do want to bang the daylights out of her and I'm sorry to say this

but I will get my wish.

Athi: you do not want to make that mistake bro.

Me: why? What's so different about her?

Athi: because she is our friend and if you do anything stupid to her then we will be paying for it for the rest of our lives, you know how girls are

Siya: Athi is right, girls and grudges... not a good combo bro

Me: or maybe you assholes are scared that I might actually win her when you've been trying to but never got anywhere with her

They both looked at each other and laughed at me as if I were telling them a joke without a punchline. Their laugh was so sarcastic and annoying.

Athi: you re....

Siya: no bro let him be. Best of luck Melo

Me: ok what am I missing?

Athi: nothing. you going to bang the daylights out of her right? Go ahead bro

It's the way he said it that made me worry. What was it about this Yandiswa chick anyway? Why were the guys so defensive over her? We continued chatting and eating and then we split the bill and went to buy a few items. We went to Sportscene and what do you know? we bumped into Yandiswa with her mother. The way she jumped for my niggas you would have sworn that they were dating. She just undermined me.

Her: guys thank you so much for coming

Siya: you know we wouldn't miss it for the world

Me: that's because you crushing on her hard

She just looked at me and didn't say anything. Geez what's with the attitude? I'm just trying to fit in here seeing that I'm the only one who goes to Howard in the group.

Athi: don't mind him. Who you here with?

Her: my mom actually. Come meet her

Siya: is she still hot? I mean if I can't have you, can't I at least have your doppelganger

She laughed, her laugh was very cute is was like a child's laugh. Her smile was just something else and her eyes, the way they got tiny when she laughed. She was a beauty no doubt, a natural beauty. She wasn't wearing any make up, not even lipstick.

Her: shut up idiot.

She pulled their arms and headed to the direction her mother was in, her mom was checking out sneakers. Talk about women who refuse to grow old, but then again she's a doctor in good shape.

Her: mom, meet my friends Siya and Athi and their friend Melokuhle

Oh wow so she knows me after all?!

Mom: nice to meet you boys. Yandiswa has told me so much about you

Yandi: even told her about your crush on her Siya

We laughed

Siya: nice to meet you Dr Gxaba. It's an innocent crush

Athi: nice to meet you Dr G, we've heard a lot about you too. Good things only

Mom: I hope so. You never know with this one

Yandi: geez mom really now? Anyway help me choose a nice and expensive sneaker guys

Mom: you really want to suck me dry huh?!

Athi: don't worry Dr G, we'll pick her the cheapest

Mom: I like this one, you should keep him

Yandi: don't flatter him mom, he'll start getting ideas

I decided to check out sneakers for myself seeing that I was an outcast.

Mom: Melokuhle what do you think?

Me: sorry, about?

Mom: this shoe

She was carrying an all-white air force

Me: for?

Yandi: me

Me: it's nice

Yandi: told you he wasn't interested.

Mom: you being rude. I didn't raise you to be rude

Yandi: he started it.

Mom: right I forgot. He walked in on you naked.
Big deal

She told her mom??? What the hell? Who tells their mom such things? Even I didn't tell my

mom or sister. I wished the ground could open up and swallow me. I was embarrassed really

Yandi: mom!

Mom: she told me Melokuhle. When you guys do decided to do something about these feelings you have for each other, use a condom

The gents just laughed. What was up with this woman?

Me: feelings?

Yandi: there are no feelings mom. I would never do anything with him

Me: same goes here Miss

Her: he's an asshole mom. A rude one even

Mom: riiight. Athi, Siya, tell me I'm not the only one seeing this

Athi: I refuse to get involved

Siya: young love is so cute. Talk about a teenage love affair

Me: you need to quit the weed you smoking Siya, its messing with your brains. Dr Gxaba, your daughter is pretty and all but she and I will never be anything. We will never do anything and that's a promise. She's rude and childish

Yandi: touché. He's too arrogant and too much of an asshole.

Me: glad we agree on something

Her mom, Siya and Athi looked at us and laughed.

Mom: look at them fight like a married couple already

Athi: I can tell that they will be perfect for each other

Me: ok. I'm out of here

I said going towards the clothing section and left them laughing. I was so annoyed. As if I would ever be with someone like her. She's childish and thinks the world revolves around

her. I mean she's not even all that for Christ sake! I pressed my phone and just roamed around while waiting for the guys.

"Melo"

I looked up and before me stood a girl I once slept with. well this ought to be awkward.

Me: Tanya

Her: how are you?

She offered to hug so I gave her a cold one and broke it ASAP.

Me: I'm good and how are you?

Her: I've had better days. You never called me?

Me: I'm sorry, I've just been way too busy with exams and all

Her: but you not busy now

Me: I'm actually here shopping for a birthday gift for my friend

Her: oh

Me: I'm sorry I never called you

Where was my twin when I needed her? She normally rescues me in these situations and talks me out of them.

Her: well there are other ways you can make up for it

She winked at me. Tanya was beautiful, well every girl I get with is beautiful but my point here is that as much as she was beautiful and had a smoking body, I wasn't interested in her. I've had my fun with her and now it's time to move on to the next one. I don't bang a girl more than once.

Me: I'm sorry but I did tell you up front that I wasn't looking for a relationship

Her: but Melo we had sex!

Me: could you keep it down. It was once, no need to catch feelings

Her: is this your thing huh? Screw and then

leave?

Me: actually yeah it is my thing and I'm sorry you not ok with it.

Her: typical. You just like all the other pretty boys out there!

Siya: everything ok here?

Her: you gay? How did I not know that?

Was it me or was this girl beauty without brains?
Why would I screw her if I were gay?

Me: excuse me?

Siya: we cousins actually but thanks for the compliment

She looked at us pissed AF and then she stormed off

Me: compliment? When has being called gay ever been a compliment?

Him: means we pretty! Which one is she?

Me: the best head giver!

Him: and what was that about?

Me: she's mad cause I never called

Him: I feel sorry for your next girlfriend.

Me: that's because I won't ever have one

Him: still bro, there'll come a time where you'll have a girlfriend and the girlfriend will have to deal with all of this

Me: yeah well my sister normally takes care of these confrontations for me

Him: you are an ass!

Me: but you still care.

Him: whatever. Where to from here?

Me: I don't know. There's this handbag I saw at Zara which I know Melody will love

Him: I'm convinced you gay. Let's go

Me: where's Athi?

Him: chatting with Yandiswa by the till, we'll

meet him outside

Me: that's stunt you guys pulled was not funny!

Him: ncooooh are you pouting now? Baby needs a hug?

Me: fuck you!

We walked out laughing and Athi followed us. On the way they were going on and on about Yandiswa and how they look forward to our wedding day which will NEVER happen and all that other crappy stuff people say to annoy you.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:20] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

7

Derrick Melokuhle Bess is an asshole! My word! How can someone so arrogant and self-centred and so rude walk on the same ground I walk on? He's such a jerk. Even the word Jerk is an understatement for him! My word I hate him and I hate my mom even more for thinking that I would ever have any sort of relationship with someone like that. I have zero interest in that guy and good god please somebody kill me if I do. Mom drove me home before heading back to Mthatha. I did ask her to stay one more day but work awaits. I went to Naledi's room and she wasn't home so I went to check on Anita and she was in bed, I got in and joined her.

Her: hey honey bubu

Me: hey mami. How are you feeling?

Her: still sore. I don't think I want to wake up today... let alone do anything

Me: well sadly you have to wake up and we have to go out with the girls and just be

beautiful

Her: when are we opening your presents anyway? What did mummy get you?

Me: I thought you would never ask! Come let's go to my room, everything is in there

Last night people did come with gifts, well those that felt it would be rude to attend someone's birthday party without a gift. I think I got round about 25-30 presents out of the +- 150 people that attended my party and even so, that 25+ was from mostly my classmates and people that know me outside campus and stuff.

Her: but I don't feel like getting up from this bed though

Me: oh well... then we'll just sit here and talk about your sexual experiences

Her: nah fam. I'm more interested in you and Zuko.

Me: please don't!

Her: no Yandiswa let's talk. What's the deal between you guys?

Me: there is no deal, trust me

Her: ok, then?

Me: that idiot uploaded a picture of him and I today, literally putting it out there that he and I are over. I mean if he wants a new girlfriend, why doesn't he flipping get himself one rather than making me the bad person? And then he has the nerve to say to people that I dumped him and he doesn't know why

Her: I'm sorry. You know how Zuko is friend. Don't let him get to you

Me: he pissed me off really bad friend and then there's also this asshole Melokuhle who thinks the world revolves around him just because he is Damon Bess's son

Her: what did he do?

Me: argh it doesn't matter what he did but lord

knows I will NEVER get with a guy like that. If I do friend, please kill me!

She just laughed at me. I was fuming, that's how pissed I was

Her: calm down.

Me: he's so annoying. This morning he walked in the house and started barking orders as if this were his place

Her: explains the tension this morning. So what order was he barking?

Me: he told me to go wake his sister up and that he did not have all day. I don't know how you guys could say I'm like him when I sweet, kind, RESpectful and so not rude.

Her: friend calm down. I apologise on his behalf. I now know that you hate his guts.

Me you have no idea.

Her: friend can I ask you something?

Me: yeah shoot.

Her: I'm asking because I love you and I care about you

Me: just Ask Nita

Her: do you still love Zuko?

Me: what?

Her: the last time you were in a relationship was with him. The person who even broke your virginity was him. Forgive me for asking but are you?

Ok that hit home! I thought of my answer clearly. Was I still in love with the asshole that broke my heart without a gun to his head?

Her: thing is friend even after he was the ass he was to you, you still went on and let him be your virgin breaker. Mind you, you said you were over him

Me: in all honesty, I think I do still love him even after everything that has happened but I just

don't see myself with him anymore. The sex was great and all but I need some change in my life. I can't keep going in circles with him. He screws up, he apologises and I take him back, our break up was my last straw. As for him being my virgin breaker, I wouldn't let a stranger break my virginity and I think it's the sex that made me realise that I never want to be with him again

Her: but you said it was great

Me: I know what I said but still friend. Just because the sex is great doesn't mean that he is a changed person and he just keeps showing me that he will never change. He's an asshole in his nature

Her: you still have that conversation where you two broke up?

Me: would I ever delete it? it's a constant reminder that whenever I think of getting back together with him, I read it and get over him

completely

Her: I see. Let's go to your room, I'm curious to see what random people bought you

I laughed at her and we went to my room. I opened Sihle's gift first and it was an Era by DJ Zinhle watch. And then I opened Athi's one and he had bought me a very cute necklace set with earrings, watch and bracelet with my name on it. Tom's gift was a new ocurpipe, Nita and I just cracked up in laughter, but it was cute though because it was purple and it had my name embedded on it. Siya bought me a cute pair of heels I once said I liked at Zara when he and I went window shopping after school. I was getting Anita's, Bonke's and Naledi's gifts tonight.

Me: I think I have seen enough

Her: please open this one, I'm curious

Me: who is it from?

Her: Asemahle Bess

Me: she bought me a gift? But she doesn't know me

Her: I guess some people don't need to know you to like you.

Me: I guess so

I opened it and it was a set by Tony&Guy (or whatever the name is), there was a hair dryer, a straightener and a curling iron. With a note inside. The note read "I know I don't know you but I have seen you around campus and you seem like a girl with style. You probably don't need this but I didn't know what to get you. Hope you like it".

Nita: wow! I like her, lets befriend her

Me: she's doing her last year either way but she did invite me to her party this December 8

Her: argh I'll be home by then

Me: can't you at least wait for the party then

leave straight after?

Her: sadly no. granny is calling me to the rural areas

Me: well that's dreadful

Her: I know right?!

We continued chatting and opening the gifts together.

Her: open this one

Me: why don't you open it?

Her: just.

I took the gift bag and checked the little card on it but nothing was written so I opened it and there was a box wrapped in paper and on the paper it was written "From DMB: 06....."

Me: who the hell is DMB?

Her: I don't know. open it

Me: what if it's a bomb?

Her: who would want to kill you?

Me: I don't know

I shrugged.

Her: just open it

I opened the gift and it was indeed a box, a box from NWJ.

Her: whoever they are, they have great taste!

I opened the box and it had this beautiful neck piece with matching earrings and bracelet.

Me: I wonder who it is.

Her: call the number idiot and find out

I dialled the number and it rang for a while because it was answered

//Person: Melo's phone hello?

Me: uhhm high. I'm Yandiswa, may I speak to DMB please

Her: hey Yandi. My brother is out at the moment

Me: DMB is Melokuhle?

Her: yeah. It's his initials, why?

Me: he bought me a birthday present. By the way I saw yours and I love it

Her: well my pleasure, glad you loved it. what did my brother get you?

Me: a gift set from NWJ

Her: oh wow! I wonder

Me: please tell him I said thanks but no thanks. I don't want his gift

Her: what? Why?

Me: he knows why

Her: what's going on between you two anyway?

Me: nothing

Her: riiight. He just came in, maybe you can tell him yourself

Me: what? No I...

I didn't even finish my sentence when I was cut off by his "Hello". His hello was so sexy you would swear you were talking to someone else. It was so bold and confident and dare I say, rich. Don't ask how a voice sounds rich, it just does.

Me: this is Yandiswa.

Him: what do you want?

Me: trust me, I didn't want to make this call but curiosity got the best of me.

Him: where did you even get my number?

Me: it was on the gift you bought me. Anyway I don't want your gift. You can stop by to fetch it

Him: you're an ungrateful bitch you know that?!

Me: excuse me!

Him: when a stranger buys you a gift out of the goodness of their heart, you say thank you and nothing else.

Me: well thank you but no thanks. I don't want it!

Him: so what must can happen now huh?

Me: I don't know. how about you come and fetch it and give it to one of your floozies

Him: you might as well throw it in the bin if you hate it so much, I don't care what you do with it!

Me: go screw yourself

Him: go jump off a cliff! //

Cut the call and slammed my phone on the bed. I was so mad! Why was this guys like this? He was so childish and arrogant for jack shiit. I took the gift and went to throw it in the bin

Nita: ok and then?

She went to take it out of the trash

Her: what's gotten into you?

Me: DMB is Derrick Melokuhle Bess

Her: friend have you any idea how much this set costs?

Me: do I care?

She showed me her phone and the set was R1500

Me: so?

Her: come on Yandi don't be like this

Me: he said I can throw it mos

Her: and you really going to throw it away?

Me: yes, because that's where things from him and him in general belong.

Her: wow! you are something else you know that

Me: so I've been told.

Just then Naledi walked it with dozens of shopping bags and she threw them on the floor and jumped on my bed.

Her: hello my babies

Us: hey

Her: why aren't we happy? Is it still the Zuko thing?

Nita: I wish. It's the Melo thing now

Her: Melo? Melokuhle?

Me: yeah him

Her: what did he do?

Nita: he bought our ungrateful friend over here a gift set from NWJ worth R1500

Her: and she doesn't want it because?

Me: he's an asshole!

Nita: one who gives good gifts

Her: if I turned down gifts because men were assholes we'd probably be broke AF, washing with cold water every morning and charging our phones on campus and I'd be walking around naked

Me: you have a trust fund and thousands of rands left for you by your dad

Her: I know but that's insurance honey. The guys I go out with take care of all my needs and

wants and my money stays untouched and invested

Me: oh wow

Nita: you can say that again

Her: anyway. You are keeping this gift and you are putting it on for tonight

Me: NO

Them: YES!

I tried arguing but they would close their ears and make that “lalalalala” noise. Talk about being childish. Eventually I gave up and put it in my drawer because I was not wearing anything from Melokuhle Bess ever! I showed them the things mom bought for me and this very nice bag I had seen at Zara. Naledi showed us her things her blesser bought for her and boy were they expensive, I envied her shame. Later on we showered and got ready for my birthday dinner. Everyone was wearing black and gold. My girls

and I were in formation. I had asked Asemahle to join us but she couldn't but she said she would take me out the next day. It was the three of us and our other 5 friends from school; Natasha, Zama, Lathitha, Liyabona and Emelie. We had a great time without anyone getting sloshed.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:20] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

8-Melo

I feel like Yandiswa was put on this earth to make my life miserable I swear. Nigga be having relationship problems yet he aint even in one. I can't believe she of all people once had a

boyfriend, I feel sorry for the poor guy. After the little shopping we did we went to my crib and found Ase with Lu in the kitchen.

Ase: was about time!

Me: nah shut up. Hey cuz

We shoulder bumped each other. We left Athi in town and I came home with Siya.

Siya: so where's Liz

Luc: she's still not interested bro

Siya: she will be someday

Siya has a thing for Liz or at least it's what he and Liz joke about. I don't know really and I don't care.

Lu: but for now let it go

Me: I saw this and thought you might like it

I said handing Melody the Zara paper bag

Her: what is it?

Me: open it and see. Where's everyone?

Ase: in the lounge

I went out to the lounge and everyone was there except Iya and Liz. It was the parents, Ngawo together with Aunt Amber and her husband. I greeted everyone.

Mom: where have you been?

Me: out with Siya. He's in the kitchen by the way. Where's Liz?

Amb: on the phone outside

Me: how long has she been?

Stu: an hour

Me: and dad let that be... that's a first

Dad: it's her husband.

Me: I bet you and Boobie used to talk for hours and nobody made you cut the call short

They looked at each other and blushed... geeez

Mom: true but the ones you talk to are not your girlfriend, they floozies

Me: uhhhm... let me go check on Yana

Everyone laughed at me. What the hell? How could mom put my business out there for everyone? I tell Mrs Bess almost everything by the way, who better than your parents for advice? I feel like dad would kind of be all judgemental and fatherly and pretty much less of a friend. With that I left them and went to find my big sister and I found her in her room facing the other direction, I joined her and cuddled her from behind.

Me: hello again

Her: hey you

Me: how are you?

Her: am I supposed to answer that question?

Me: I think that's how conversations work. The other one asks a question and the other

responds... you know that type of thing

Her: oh right...uhhmm I'm ok, how are you?

Me: having girl problems yet they aren't even mine

She chuckled and turned to face me.

Her: what happened now?

Me: remember the party I went to last night?

Her: the one Athi & Siya forced you to attend?

Me: yeah that one. Ase was super sloshed and high

Her: mom is going to kill her

Me: she doesn't know... well actually she does and I don't know how. Now listen, so there's chick, her name is Yandiswa Gxaba a....

Her: where's your phone let's stalk her

Me: what? NO!

Her: come on. You suck with descriptions

Me: no I don't

Her: your description of a girl is; "she's smoking hot, has an ass for days or boobs for days"

Me: firstly, I don't talk like that. Secondly that's not true!

She gave me that "really" look

Me: fine!

I searched my pockets and nothing. I then remembered I must have left it in the kitchen together with my shades and keys. I walked out and bumped into my twin talking on my phone, she handed it to me without saying who the caller was only to find out it was Yandiswa-Kill me now! - I walked inside Iya's room and sat on the bed and spoke to her. Who the hell calls you and insults you on your phone? Yandiswa was one crazy b*tch and I would be damned to ever be with someone that crazy! She must think the world revolves around her or something. She was being unnecessarily rude. After the call I

threw my phone on the bed and threw myself back.

Iya: relationship problems?

Me: like never before. I hate her! She's an ungrateful bitch.

Her: who?

Me: Yandiswa

Her: lemme see her picture

Me: I don't have it

Her: Facebook idiot!

Me: deactivated my account years ago.

She took my phone and she got onto my Facebook and made me reactivate my account and then search her. We had 3 mutual friends; Melody, Athi and Siya. Her posts were public but her pictures weren't, you could only see pictures she was tagged on, she had over 3000 friends

Me: oh well sorry

Her: call Melody to come with her phone

Me: really?

Her: yes, really!

I walked out to call Ase and she came with me to Iya's room.

Ase: what's this about?

Iya: I want to stalk Melo's new crush and you are her Facebook friend

Me: new crush? Fuck No!

Ase: who's the crush?

Me: no one

Iya: yandiswa

We spoke at the same time. They both looked at me and laughed

Ase: I knew it!

She took out her phone and paged through it

and probably found her because she gave Iya the phone. I was curious so I checked her out with Iya and Boy oh Boy! She was the type to get over 3000 likes on her pictures. She was real flames no doubt!

Ase: thanks for the bag. I love it

Me: you welcome

Iya: where's my bag?

Me: you have a job and it pays well too

Iya: but still

Me: Ase has been cut off financially

Iya: what? Why?

Ase: mom is just being dramatic

Iya: you know I can't speak on your behalf if you don't tell me right?

Ase: ok fine. So I went to a party last night and got sloppy drunk, apparently mom and dad had been tryna call me but I was unreachable, now

they mad

Iya: you know you need to quit alcohol right?

Ase: it's not like I drink on school days mos

Iya: I understand that bhabha but still. You were admitted into hospital for alcohol poisoning. You won't be so lucky this time around

Ase rolled her eyes

Ase: yes, mummy

Iya: I need you to promise me Asemahle. No more alcohol

Ase: not even a glass of wine?

Iya: one!

Ase: F*ck NO! I'm 20 for Christ sake

Iya: then start acting like it.

Ase raised her hands up in defeat and Iya and I continued going through Yandiswa's pictures. She was all sorts of beautiful no doubt.

Me: wait go back

Her: why?

Me: I want to see something

She went back and I noticed she had the same bag I had bought my sister

Me: you've got to be kidding me

Them: what?

Me: she's carrying the same bag I bought you

It was a picture of her at ICC, her background gave her away. Ase came to our side and she peeked.

Iya: even your taste is the same

Ase: you guys are a match made in heaven

“who is?”

We all turned and saw Liz standing by the door. I got up to hug her.

Her: just because I'm not a Bess doesn't mean I

appreciate being excluded

I broke the hug and we went to sit down.

Me: well there's this girl

Liz: could this mean you finally have a girlfriend?

Ase: we wish. He has a crush on her

Iya: and this one is beautiful

Me: all the girls I get with are beautiful

Ase made coughing sounds and they all laughed.

Me: screw you! As I was saying, her name is Yandiswa and she's pretty and all but her attitude stinks! She's a bitch from hell that one and she thinks the world revolves around her

Ase: in normal people language she is actually the opposite. I was with her yesterday and this morning and she is such a sweet person. But because Derrick is Derrick, she doesn't like him. Says he was rude and that he is annoying

Iya: she's perfect. It would make a perfect wedding story one day

Me: what? Fuck No! I would rather die than be with her and she said the same

Ase: when did you two meet?

Me: at Gateway and she was with her mom who also said this crazy shiit you guys are saying and for once she and I agreed on us never happening ever!

Liz: young love. So adorable!

Me: I'm out of here!

I said taking my phone and leaving them to discuss me further because that's what they always do when they get together. I went to join everyone else who was sitting in the lounge chatting up a storm. Siya and Luc weren't around so I'm assuming they were at Siya's place or something

Mom: Oh my word that was classic! I still

cannot believe she made dad wash the car in the rain

Amb: Lilly Bess was not a woman one wanted to mess with

Me: Grammy made grandpa wash the car in the rain? Why?

Dad: well there's this one-time dad came home late and he hadn't been answering mom's calls right, and to top it all off he walked on her new white rug with muddy feet. Dad tried to apologise and explain but Mom didn't want to hear jack shiit. She made him wash the car in the rain

Me: and grandpa did that?

Amb: if he didn't then she would have locked him out, it was his choice really

Me: Grammy was a bully

Dad: yeah and your mother seems to take right after her

Mom: what? NO I'm nothing like Lilly

Dad: Amahle once made me fly to PE all because her father and brother had a fight. Mind you PE is super cold at that around May and she didn't bother warning me by the way so I rocked up in shorts and t-shirt and then she suggests we go to the flipping beach. Have you any idea how cold it is at the beach around midnight?

We were all in stitched

Mom: but it was worth it

She kissed dad's cheek

Him: help me understand how that was worth it? you were wearing your nice warm onesy and a gown on top

Amb: yep, sounds like something mom would have done

Mom: I missed him though and we got to have sex in the car for the first time

Me: child ears in the room woman!

It was such moments I treasured with my family. Moments where we could sit together and laugh about anything and everything together and just be carefree. Iya and the other girls decided to join us and join in on the reminiscing.

Mom: there's this one time Elizabeth made me change my whole outfit all because I'm a future Mrs Bess and Damon Bess's wife could not be seen wearing such

Amb: she was 8 right?

Me: Liz you were mean.

Dad: I thought she looked good. She was wearing sweatpants, white vest and a sneaker but my niece over here felt it was too simple for a future Mrs Bess

Me: and you listened to her and changed?

Mom: said she wasn't going anywhere with me dressed like that

Ase: oh wow. I can't believe you did that to our mother

Liz: I looked on point so she needed to look on point to

Dad: in all fairness, she looked hotter when she changed her outfit

Iya: dad!

Mom: but he's right though.

Me: what's the worst thing you've ever went through as a parent?

Amb: explaining hickies. Liz was an inquisitive child, I had to say it allergies

Mom: I said to Iya it was mosquito bites and then she saw them on Damon

Me: the hell were you doing giving a man hickies mom?

Dad: what goes on in the bedroom stays there

Ase: you guys are disgusting!

Iya: aaah there was this time when we were driving to Mthatha with mom and then you guys started asking mom about gays and lesbians

Ase: we were curious

Amb: argh shame mahn. Those are the worst. How did you explain it?

Mom: I told them that in my understanding kids are bought at the hospital. They kept going on and on about how their classmates said it wasn't possible for two women to have babies and all of that. What's worse is that these situations never happened when Damon was around

We all laughed and continued chatting until later on we ordered pizza and then the rest headed to their houses and left us alone bonding, Ngawo didn't sleep at my crib of cause and I was forced to sleep at the mansion. Like I said, these moments were the best. It felt so nice reminiscing and hearing about the things

we did as kids, Iyana was laughing and she was genuinely happy. She didn't forget what she went through but at that moment it was as if she had forgotten.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:20] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

9

My birthday dinner with my girls was just amazing. After ICC we went to our crib for a slumber party ish type of thing. Bonke came to drop my gift off and then he left. The things my friends bought me were all too beautiful and I loved all of them. We were in my room with snacks watching a movie but mostly chatting

than watching the movie. My phone rang and it was a private number, I went out to the bathroom to answer it because those ones were making a lot of noise.

//Me: hello?

Person: hey Yandiswa

I could tell by his voice that it was Zuko.

Me: what do you want?

Him: Yands I'm sorry

Me: for what exactly?

Him: everything

Me: ok

Him: come on Yands don't be like this

Me: and how should I be Zuko huh? You dumped me

Him: I didn't dump you Yands, you said let's end it and I said it was cool so technically you ended things

Me: you being fucking childish right now

Him: it's the truth

Me: is this why you called me?

Him: no I called to apologise

Me: and you did bye now

Him: Yandiswa wait... please

Me: fine

Him: look. I'm sorry for everything. I'm an ass, always been one and probably always will be, Yandiswa I love you and I miss you. I know I screwed us up and you'll probably never forgive me for the things I've done. Yandiswa I made a huge mistake and I want you back. Ple....

Me: No Zuko I don't want to hear any of this. You should have told me this about 6 to 7 months ago. Not this and not now

Him: why Yandiswa?

Me: because Zuko that's when I needed to hear

it and not now. You broke my heart with the way you handled things and I don't think I want to go back to that. You made me feel less of a woman all because I wouldn't lose my virginity when you wanted me to

Him: Yan...

Me: I'm not done talking. I've been trying to get my life back in order all this month and I'm still trying to do so even now. Zuko I forgive you for what you done but you and I? that will never happen again. Yes you broke my virginity but that's as far as it goes. We will never be again, I learnt my lesson

Him: ouch.

Me: please don't ever call me again. You and I are nothing; we will never be anything more than exes

Him: oh... ok then. Happy birthday.

Me: thank you and bye//

I was sitting on a closed toilet seat, tears started rolling, I don't even know why I was crying but I was. It was actually my first time actually telling him straight up that I was done with him and that I never wanted anything to do with him and I think I meant it, I loved him and all but the pain he's put me through, ok maybe I'm exaggerating but when you love a person to the point of no return it's not easy to forgive and forget the things they put you through. When I said we should end things, it's not like I meant it; I expected him to be the boyfriend he's always been and tell me that I'm crazy and that he wasn't going to allow such nonsense from me but nope, not this time around, I guess he was also sick and tired of the fighting and everything else. Just thinking about the night we broke up brought more tears into my eyes. I heard the door open and close, I didn't bother looking up because then whoever the person was is going to ask me questions and I won't be able to

answer the real reason I was crying.

“everything ok?”

Of course it was Naledi, I mean who else could it have been. She came to kneel in front of me and made me look at her. Naledi was there the night Zuko and I broke up and she went through the whole pain with me. I shook my head with tears streaming down. She took a tissue and wiped my tears.

Her: honey boo what's wrong?

Me: that was Zuko

Her: what did he want?

Me: he wants me back I guess

She kept quiet for a while, almost like she was thinking of what to say from then onwards

Her: Listen Zuko messed things up, he's supposed to be crying and not you. He screwed things up and not you my friend. He doesn't deserve your tears; you weren't going to have

sex because he couldn't wait. You did nothing wrong my friend, he did. I was there when you guys ended things, you cried enough because of him. Don't let him do this to you, don't let him take you 10 steps back to where you once were 7 months ago. There's a reason things went the way they did, if you and him are meant to be then trust and believe that you will be. God will find a way for you two to be. You spent so much time rebuilding yourself to become this woman you are now, don't let him take you back, he's not worth it. you are going to meet the man of your dreams and he will love you more than you've ever been loved before. Ok?

I nodded and she kissed my forehead.

Her: I love you sweet cheeks

Me: I love you too. Thank you

Her: what are sisters for?

I smiled and so did she.

Her: come let's go sit with the others and scream our lungs out when someone dies in that movie like any normal girl ok?

Me: ok

I washed my face and wiped it with a towel then went back to the room with my hand in hers. Trust Naledi to treat me like her baby but I loved her anyway. The room was dark and only the tv screen on, we were watching Insidious, I like horrors that are confusing and also scary by the way, not those predictable things like final destination or wrong turn. I'm all about ghosts and stuff. I was sitting between Ledi and Emelie, both scardy cats by the way. After the movie ended they wanted chapter two of it

Me: weren't you guys just crying and super scared?

Lathi: so what if it we were?

Tash: it was a nice movie ok. Now please, chapter 2

Nita: I'll go refill the snacks

Em: I'll join you

Me: I wonder what you wanna gossip about?

Em: I know I love to gossip but not that much
geez

Ledi: riiight. We believe you

They went out laughing and the rest of us
engaged in a conversation.

Lathi: so I met a guy

Me: when and where?

Ledi: what's his name and where does he work?

Lathi: he's a student at Howard you guys

Ledi: oh...

Lathi: as I was saying, his name is Derrick Ngesi
and he's studying law doing his final

Me: you mean Melokuhle Bess?

Her: he said his surname was Ngesi and

nothing about a Bess

We searched for him on Facebook and found nothing then we took the search to Instagram and there he was with a private account

Me: follow him

Ledi: what? NO I'm not doing that, you do it

Me: he won't accept my request if it's the Derrick I think it is

Ledi: fine

She sent him a follow request and minutes later she was approved but nigga didn't follow back, Ledi's account was also private

Tash: why didn't he follow back?

Ledi: because like him my account is private

We went through his pictures and dare I say... H-O-T!

Lathi: its him

Me: don't even invest in him friend. He doesn't

do relationships

Tash: you know this how?

Me: he was here this morning to fetch his sister.
The guy is an ass

Lathi: ahhh mahn and here I was thinking I
finally met a good one

Me: sorry buddy, you are way too sweet for him

Lathi: but he was sweet to me when we
bumped into each other

Me: where?

Lathi: when I was gift hunting.

Ledi: well try things out and see where things
take you

Me: I totally disagree; he'll only break your heart.
He screws and leaves

Tash: what does his sister have to say about
him?

Me: that he doesn't do relationships

Lathi: but he's cute and he has an amazing voice and I like him

Ledi: then go for him but don't say we didn't warn you

I just kept quiet. Lathitha is a very sweet girl, more or less like Anita but she's not a virgin. Her last relationship ended about a year ago and lately she has been focusing on herself and trying to rebuild herself. Her last boyfriend slept with her best friend and now they dating, men can be very trashy if you ask me. So that's just how Lathitha's life has been.

Tash: I still think you should give it a shot

Lathi: ay I don't know

Em: what don't you know?

Ledi: she's thinking of going out with Derrick Bess

Nita: bad idea friend

Ledi: even Nita thinks it's a bad idea

Nita: he's friends with Bonke and Bonke has told me all about the guy, how he screws only without any strings. The guy has NEVER been in a serious relationship before

Tash: maybe Lathi could be the guys first. You never know

Nita: and you sure you want to be the one to find that out, look at what happened to Yandi... no offense

Me: none taken. Zuko was a no serious relationship guy until I came along

Em: yeah but you were a virgin so you couldn't really expect him to be a prince charming now

Me: I wasn't but still, fuckboys are never a good idea. You do him the way he does you

Ledi: I taught you well. Derrick doesn't want a relationship friend. I bet you he has a list of blocked contacts on his WhatsApp or iChat or whatever as we speak

Lathi: I appreciate everything you guys are saying but can I please put my hand in the fire just this once and get burnt on my own so that I actually know what I'm talking about in future

Me: I rest my case

I lifted my hands up in defeat. Lathitha is the type that hurts really hard when she hurts, she's the type that even goes as far as cutting herself so you can understand why we so protective. Derrick is an ass and he'll only push her to that point.

Ledi: fine lady. Good luck

Tash: let's just watch the movie ok. Everyone back to your places and let's enjoy the rest of the day ok?

I got a WhatsApp text from Asemahle saying she can't come to town to meet so can I come over to her home instead, she'll pay for my cab or petrol if need be apparently she was sort of grounded in a way. I didn't know what to say so

I didn't respond and the girl called me. I went to answer it in the toilet again.

//me: hey

Her: did I say something wrong?

Me: I can't come to your house

Her: why? I can get our driver to come and fetch you dude

Me: come on Ase

Her: please. It's bad enough my parents don't want me to go anywhere and now you going to cancel on me?

Me: manipulation doesn't work on me

Her: I'll make sure that Derrick is not around

I thought for a second

Me: ok fine

Her: you really hate his guts huh?

Me: maybe if he stopped being an ass then I

wouldn't

Her: come over and I'll tell you all about him and why he's the way he is

Me: trust me, I don't care why he's like that

Her: you will one way or the other

Me: I guess I don't have a choice

Her: thank you so much. My sister is going to love you!

Me: I'm scared already

Her: relax. Bring a nice bottle of wine on your way, I'll refund you

Me: sweet or dry?

Her: dry red

Me: ok cool

Her: goodnight

Me: night//

I went back to my room. I wonder what is it

about Derrick Bess and relationships. I can't say I was looking forward to tomorrow, what if I bump into him? It is his home after all. We watched the movie till the end and then we spoke a bit before calling it a night. Life was amazing for that while.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:20] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

10-Melo

I was woken up by Mrs Bess jumping on top of my bed as she used to back when I was a kid. See why I don't like spending the night at home?? She wakes me up like this all the time, talk about those annoying parents who are still on

Instagram and twitter and Facebook oh and how can I forget, snapchat. I think they don't want to grow or something and the things they comment on our pictures or the pictures they post of us... let me not say much! Anyway she kept jumping up and down on my bed telling me to wake up.

Me: ha.a mom this is not fair

Her: wakey wakey

Me: I'm up. What do you want?

Her: that's no way to talk to your mother now is it?

She said sitting on top of me, I was still under the blankets.

Me: sorry mom. What's up?

I took my phone and looked at the time, it was just after 6. I removed the blanket over my head

Me: Boobie what the hell

Her: wake up. I just got back from a jog with Siya

Me: yeah well you have a husband to tell all of this to

Her: my husband is gone on a business trip

Me: its Sunday...

Her: I know. he had to fly to New York, there's some stuff that needs him urgently

Me: shame mahn

Her: yeah shame mahn. You the closest thing to him so I'm telling you

I pulled the blanket over my head again

Me: I didn't sign up for this

Her: you did when you decided to look like him

She said pulling it off of me. This woman you guys.

Her: get up we going to church

Me: you still do that?

Her: I will slap the daylights out of you

I laughed at how serious she sudden was.

Me: I was joking geez.

Her: I hope you still go to church

Me: like I have a choice

Her: why don't you teach your twin that church is actually a thing

Me: yeah well maybe if you gave her things back she would go

Her: nah she still wouldn't go. Melo I'm worried about her

I sat up properly and she got in bed with me and leaned on my shoulder.

Me: Ase is going to be fine mom. She just needs time

Her: it's been 5 months already Melo. They were my parents Melo, I lost a big part of me when

they died and I don't understand why she's behaving like this. I've tried Melo, I truly have. I don't know what to do anymore. She's my daughter and I love her, me punishing her is not because I hate her or anything like that. I just want her to grow up and see that there's more to life than drinking till you pass out or till you land up in hospital. It's not like I'm saying I don't want you guys going out and having fun but I would appreciate it if you guys toned it down a bit. Andrew almost died because of this drinking, the truck driver that drove into him was driving under the influence and look who got hurt and lost his spine in the process

Nothing hurts more than a mother's silent cry. The things we put our mother's through are the worst. Mom and I are very close, more than she is with the rest of my siblings; you could even go as far as saying I'm her favourite child, anyway as much as we talk and sometimes have those deep conversations, it was my first

time hearing her speak like this. I put my arm around her and kissed the side of her forehead.

Me: we all heal differently mom. We all have our own different coping mechanisms and hers happens to be alcohol. She's not an addict but I guess that's just how she deals with the pain mom. Let's give her time and maybe she'll eventually quit because at the end of the day you can't force someone to do something they not ready to do

Her: I guess you right. when did you grow up?

I chuckled

Me: mom really now?

Her: one minute you asking me about gays and lesbians and the next you teaching me how to be a parent. I mean really now Derrick?

Me: come on Boobie don't play like that. I'm 20 remember?

Her: you grow to become more like your father

by the day

Me: I'm nothing like him

Her: you are a photocopy of him. You his doppelganger

Me: same way Melody is yours right

Her: ha ha ha ha very funny Melo. Let's go make breakfast.

Me: ok get out let me wear something proper

Her: honey there is nothing I haven't seen in a much larger size

I looked at her and laughed so hard and so did she. Did my mom just diss my D? guys where did I get this woman? You see if I were to be in a relationship it would have to be with someone like my first lady over here, she's all sorts of AWESOME and you can't help but love her.

Me: Mom what the fuck? NO!

Her: what? I've seen it all baby don't worry

Me: my god which planet did dad get you?

Her: planet Earth somewhere in Ushaka Marine world and then again at a club on Florida and then later at Berea pick n pay

Me: I know that story already mom... geez

Her: you asked

I was wearing briefs, I'm a huge fan and an even bigger fan of Calvin Klein. I got up and took out a tee in my wardrobe and pjay pants

Her: told you I've seen better

I took a small pillow on the chair and threw it at her and she laughed and threw one back.

Me: you might as well make my bed Mi. Lady

Her: in your dreams!

She said getting off of my bed and sitting at the edge.

Me: you so cruel

Her: go brush your teeth and lets go

With that I walked to my bathroom and washed my face and brushed my teeth and then we walked out.

Me: and what about your other kids?

Her: they sleeping

Me: you found me sleeping

Her: yeah but Iya needs the rest and Melody is helping her rest

Me: talk about favouritism

She just laughed at me and dragged me to her room to take her phone and then we both walked down to the kitchen. She made me do all the chopping while she made omelettes for everyone, when she was done she told me to go wake the girls up. I got to Iya's room and knocked once before going in.

Ase: ever heard of knocking

Me: yeah and I did, not my fault you two were busy gossiping

Iya: morning brother. How are you?

Me: morning sisters. I'm good thank you and how are you?

Iya: we great. Why are you up so early?

Me: blame your mother

They both laughed.

Ase: thank god you home

Me: and you wonder why I don't spend my weekends here

Iya: argh at least it gave you two sometime to bond. So what's for breakfast?

Me: follow me and you'll see

Ase: I'm hoping for a nice English breakfast. I'm talking beacon and eggs, freshly squeezed orange juice

Iya and I looked at each other and we laughed at her. This one thinks this is some kind of hotel or something.

Iya: wishful thinking sis. Mom wouldn't dare, especially with dad away

Ase: dad's gone?

Iya: he left this morning around 4. He's gone to NY City

Ase: this guy. How come you didn't wake me?

Me: you were probably dead asleep as usual.

Iya: morning Boobie

She kissed mom's cheek

Ase: morning mom. This smells great

We all gathered around the table and took our seats

Mom: thanks baby. mornings. Iya please bless the food

Iya: may we please bow our heads and pray.
Dear lord we come before you thanking you for the food we are about to receive in your name, Amen.

Us: Amen

Iya: this really looks good mom

Mom: and it tastes just as good

Iya: so which service are we attending?

Mom: I was thinking the morning and then later on we go over to Amber's

Ase: since I'm not allowed to go out, can my friend come over this afternoon?

Me: aren't you going to church with us?

Ase: I don't have anything church worthy here.

Mom: as long as that friend is not a boy

Ase: trust me it's not a boy mom.

Mom: fine then.

We continued eating and just chatting about random stuff

Mom: so have you and Ngawo decided on a wedding date?

Iya: nah not yet. I don't think I want to get married anymore

Me: what?

Mom: why?

Iya: I love Ngawo, he's a dream but I can't help but feel like we rushing things. If it wasn't for the baby, I don't think we'd even be engaged
mom

Ase: but I thought you loved him?

Iya: I do love him but why do I feel like he's not the man of my dreams? I mean have you seen what mom and dad have? The love they share and the way they look at each other almost like it's their first time meeting. I don't have that with Ngawo, we lack that connection

Ase: and when did you realise this?

Iya: I guess losing the baby has given me time to actually re-evaluate my relationship with him

Mom: if you sure about your decision then you

have my support. At the end of the day you don't want to get into a marriage you are uncertain of. I mean love alone is not enough to make you stay in a relationship

Ase: but mom you one to talk, you've only ever been with two men in your life

Mom: and having been with only two men I was lucky enough to find my dream guy after my heartbreak

Me: mmmh I see. So what? Does this mean you going to give Ngawo his lobola back?

Iya: if you can do that, then yes. I see no reason to not

Mom: does this mean that you breaking the engagement off?

Iya: yes, mom.

Mom: as a concerned mother I have to ask. Don't you think you making premature decisions because of what you've been through?

I mean I know what it's like to lose a child and when you've been through such you begin questioning everything about your relationship with your partner, you don't even know whether you guys are going to get through this storm or not

Iya: but it's nothing like that mom. Ngawo is a good guy but I can't help but feel like the love I'm returning to him is... what's the word?.... little? I mean the guy loves me more than I love him, he has everything planned out for us and I'm just ouchea still growing and still trying to find myself after everything that has happened

Me: mom if Yana doesn't want to marry Ngawo anymore then we shouldn't try convince her otherwise.

Ase: hahaha I always knew you secretly didn't like the guy

Me: it's not that I don't like him but I feel like he's too nerdy for my sister and Yana deserves

a guy who challenges her more than she challenges herself. Yana is like Elena from The Vampire Diaries and then Ngawo is like Stefan, Stefan's never get the girl! not ever!

Everyone laughed.

Mom: why am I not surprised you'd make a reference to Vampire Diaries? You really are your father's son.

I just smiled. We continued chatting and when we were done Asemahle offered to clear the table and then she washed the dishes, it was shocking but I guess she really wanted her life back. When she was done she cleaned the kitchen and then we left and went to church. After church we drove straight home and as I was walking into the lounge I bumped into a very beautiful person with an unpleasant attitude. This had to be a start of a bad joke I swear!

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:21] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES
LOVE*

.

.

11

I can't say I was looking forward to today. I kept hoping and praying that I don't bump into Derrick Jerk-ass-miserable Melokuhle Bess! I got a call from Asemahle around 7 asking me to come over at 8 and that I should not bring the wine bottle anymore on my way to her crib and she asked me to carry a bikini and stuff and so I woke up and showered and then prepared to go over. Anita, Lathitha and Emelie were going to go to church to attend the morning service while the rest said they were going to stay indoors and cook lunch and you know Naledi,

she was going out with her Minister of everything. We were in her room, me and her and she was preparing an outfit.

Her: how does this look?

She was wearing a short dress and a nice stiletto

Me: makes you look like dessert

Her: that's the point though

Me: no friend. If you go looking like that then he won't bother even going all out to impress you, he'll take you straight to a hotel and get right on to business

Her: I guess you right. so what do you suggest

I took out a pair of boyfriend jeans with white vest and a leather jacket

Me: try this

Her: now you just playing

Me: you like this guy and you want to leave an

impression right?

Her: who said I like him?

Me: I'm not stupid now am I?

Her: no.

Me: you never spend this much time with them nor do you go through so much trouble to impress. So what is it about this one?

Her: I don't know my friend. Everything about him is just perfect and makes me want him. Out of all the guys I normally hang with, he is the first to ever take control in sex and also refuse it

Me: well aren't you weird

Her: I don't expect you to understand

Me: I'm kidding babe I understand you perfectly.

Her: when he asked me to come out last night he gave me a goodnight kiss and a box of chocolate and he asked me out for breakfast.

No sex no nothing

Me: wow. he's a keeper. Does this mean you're in love?

Her: too soon honey boo. Plus, I don't do long distance relationships

Me: take it this way. You'll be visiting LA every now and then

Her: argh I don't know friend. What if he has a secret life he's leading in the states and is hiding it?

Me: you only met him Friday friend. Don't be dramatic, get to know him first

Her: fine. Uhhm how do I look?

She turned around and I must say she was flames.

Me: you look like a keeper my friend. Total flames

She chuckled

Her: you just playing

Me: no really though friend. You look beautiful

Her: thanks. Why am I suddenly nervous?

Me: who wouldn't be?

Her: I want to cancel

Me: no ways Naledi. You are going to that breakfast and you going to enjoy yourself!

She nodded.

Her: you look good too by the way

Me: I have to. What if I bump into Mrs Bess?

Her: is she the only one you worried about?

Me: who else would I be worried about?

Her: I don't know, her son maybe?

Me: I just don't wish to bump into him that's all.

I was wearing a loose white dress with a blue suede wedge and carrying my new bag mummy bought with my hair untied and a navy blazer.

We took selfies as usual and then she called her guy who came to fetch us and then went to drop me off at the mansion. It was really a mansion no lie, it was the most beautiful house I had ever seen before! I rang the buzzer and the gate opened, the yard was super big and the cars that were parked in the yard were just something else. Who knew that idiot lived in such a beautiful house? Asemahle came out wearing shorts and a tank top with flip flops and her hair hanging loosely, she had long hair.

Her: hey baby

She said hugging me

Me: hey you.

I broke the hug

Me: dude your house is beautiful!

Her: thanks. Wait till you see it inside. How are you?

She said leading me inside.

Me: I'm good and how are you?

Her: I'm good. Wait is that my bag?

Me: you have a bag like this?

Her: my brother bought it for me yesterday

Me: the same colour?

Her: yeah. Come let me show you

She led me upstairs, on the way up on the wall was pictures of the family, from when they were kids to now, their house was magical. We got to her room which was also just beautiful! She opened a door which led to a walk in closet and she came out carrying the same bag as mine.

Me: your brother has great taste

Her: I taught him well.

Me: where is everyone?

Her: dad is in New York and the rest went to church. You look amazing by the way

Me: thank you. You too

Her: yeah right. do you want to chill indoors or you want to go swimming?

Me: you made me carry a bikini. We might as well.

I took my dress off revealing my black high waist bikini

Her: damn girl! I see what my brother was talking about

Me: what are you talking about?

Her: your body is flames and that he would like to bang you someday!

Me: hahaha what?

I couldn't believe my ears. Melokuhle wanted to bang me? What? My ears had to be deceiving me and even so he was dreaming because I would never bang him.

Her: you really don't like my brother huh?

Me: maybe the day he stops being an ass, I'll

make an exception

She laughed at me and then she took off her things and we headed down talking about my hate for her brother and what actually spiralled it all. We got to the water and she got in while I just sat at the edge, not all of us are lucky enough to have some white in our blood like her.

Her: you know, he's not such a bad person

Me: of cause you would say that, you the guy's sister

Her: he can be an ass at times but trust me he is not such a bad guy Yandi; you just don't know him well or you've caught him in the mood

Me: is it so hard for him to actually play nice with people he doesn't know?

She chuckled and she got out of the water and sat next to me.

Her: hahaha I can't speak for him on that but I will tell you this, my brother wasn't always such

an ass. He was a very sweet guy back in high school and he was pretty much every girl's dream boyfriend and then his girlfriend cheated on him with his best friend then and from there on wards he's been playing girls and pretty much the ass he is now.

Me: still doesn't explain his attitude Asemahle. I got out of a bad relationship not so long ago and you don't see me lashing out or playing men. Your brother needs to learn to be nicer to strangers.

Her: we lost our grandmother and grandfather this year in august and as my coping mechanism I turned to alcohol, I'm talking heavy drinking. Worse than your birthday type of drinking, at this one party I got alcohol poisoning but that still didn't stop me from drinking. Melo has been worried about me ever since and he's been doing his all to protect me. Even if it means hurting someone else's feelings in the process. I don't expect you to

understand him or accept the way he is, but I just felt like I should tell you why he was the way he was to you when I was drunk and also I am sorry for the way he spoke to you

Just because people look like they happy and they have it all doesn't mean that they actually are the way they look. I did read about Mr and Mrs Hlathi's tragic death but I didn't think it affected their family this bad. Asemahle's story changed my whole perspective on her brother and her as a whole.

Me: I'm sorry I didn't know.

Her: nobody besides the family knows. We may seem like life is all roses and sweet and all but it isn't. Derrick is the only guy amongst girls and whatever terrible thing that happens to us, it hits him harder. Like the year my sister found out her real mom died while giving birth to her, Yana took it so bad that she actually turned to drugs to cope but with the right guy she pulled

through. Of course her being involved in such took its toll on my brother

I was shocked honestly. I mean how? The Bess seems to be the most perfect family there is out there only to find out that they're dealing with such? I mean this is hard to take in honestly. The more she told me about her family, the more I began to understand her twin. He wasn't an ass by nature but that's the front he put up so that people lose interest in him.

Me: I am so sorry to hear that Mahle

Her: it's water under the bridge. I would appreciate it though if you didn't tell anyone about pretty much everything I've told you ok?

Me: my lips are sealed.

Her: my brother likes you, you showed him that you actually care about other people. He doesn't want to admit that he likes you though because then it would ruin his rep. He likes to make people believe he's a jerk so that he

doesn't get close to anyone and so that anyone doesn't get close to him because he feels like people are safer that way. The less he needs to worry and care about other people outside his circle, the better.

Me: complicated.

Her: I know right. can I get you something to eat?

Me: yeah sure

She got out of the water and dried herself and so did I and then we went inside. She made us chicken wraps with chips on the side and a mini salad with some juice and then we went to chill in the lounge and just talked about stuff.

Me: so you've never had a boyfriend?

Her: I wish but no. I guess I've never seen the need for one seeing that my brother plays the role all too well

Me: don't you get horny or something?

Her: hahaha on my periods, yes but come on.

Aint like you going to die if you don't get sex right?

Me: I guess

Her: how many guys have you dated?

Me: dated? 2, the rest it's just been flirting and child's play. So there's my ex right, the current ex; he and I have been flirt mates for 3 years until we decided to officialise things only for us to end this year, a few days before our anniversary.

Her: ouch! And the others?

Me: well my first boyfriend was in grade 9 and it was for the sake of dating, didn't even last 6 months and I was already tired of the guy. We never even kissed ever

She laughed.

Me: my second one we dated from end December til end march the following year and he was studying in Queens boys and to top it

off, he was a rugby player so he was never home and he never had time so I dumped him. And then the third one, I didn't know we were dating until he wished me a happy anniversary and I called it quits on that same day

Her: oh my word you suck!

Me: I know right. I've never had problems with dumping guys except Zuko

Her: what about him?

I paged through my phone to the last conversation we had where he agreed to us calling it quits.

Me: uhhm read from here to... you'll see where it all ends. May I take the dishes?

Her: yeah sure thanks.

With that I took the dishes to the kitchen, I had a towel wrapped around my body and my hair was all over the place. As I was walking out of the lounge I was suddenly intoxicated by a

familiar cologne, one I knew all too well. I didn't want to look up because I was scare it might just be him.

Him: so you are Melody's guest?

My towel decided it was time to show Mr Bess my body again and this time there were things in my had, at least I was wearing a bikini this time but still. He chuckled

Me: a little help

Him: a little please?

He said with a smirk on his face. I could hear noise coming from the kitchen-kill me now please-

Me: Derrick please

He looked at me for a while and then took the dishes while I picked my towel up

Him: why don't I have my phone with me when things like this happen?!

He said laughing while walking to the kitchen and just then his mom and sister appeared. Mrs Bess was beyond beautiful and her body and everything was on fleek. She was wearing a red below the knee pencil skirt with a gold zip in front, navy shirt and a white blazer with Navy heels and a white handbag. She looked amazing with her hair tied up in a neat bun. Iyana was wearing a burgundy body hugging dress which was slightly below the knee with white heels and a white blazer with a gold handbag and her brother wore a navy suit, white sneakers and a white shirt with a red bow tie. Talk about the matching mother and son.

Ama: hello

Iya: Yandiswa

How does she know me guys???

Me: uhhm hello Mrs Bess and Miss Bess

They both laughed

Iya: call me Iyana please. I know you because I actually stalked you. Nice to meet you by the way, I'm Asemahle's big sister

Ok... creepy much.

Me: uhhm, I'm Yandiswa but you already knew that. I'm Asemahle's friend. How are you?

Ama: we are good baby and how are you?

Me: I'm also good thanks.

She walked to the lounge and Yana went upstairs and so I followed mama Bess.

Her: will you be joining us for dinner?

Me: uhhm dinner?

Ase: say yes please. She never takes no for an answer

Me: uhhm

Ama: I really don't take no for an answer sweetie

Me: uhhm ok. Thanks for the invite

Ama: good. Uhhm do you have anything to wear of will you need something to wear?

I was about to respond when Asemahle cut me off

Ase: she came wearing bum shorts mum, told her we were going to be swimming

Ama: I know what you trying to do. You not going anywhere. Your brother will accompany Yandiswa to her place to go and change

Melo: what now?

Ama: you accompanying Yandiswa to her place to change and then you'll pass by your sister's place and pack her a bag with decent church worthy clothes

Him: yes, Ma'am

Ama: then everything is settled.

And with that she got up off the chair and went up the stairs. This woman and barking orders. Asemahle and I went up to her room and I

changed into my dress while talking about the conversation she read between Zuko and me and boy did she hate him. A while later Derrick came knocking and he asked if I was ready to go and so we left. -god please kill me now! –

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:21] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

12-Melo

Oh mom though. Father forgive her for she knows not what she is doing. In mom's defence, of everything I tell her, I haven't told her about Yandiswa because then she would ask lots of questions and she would play match make and assume that I want her and she would

encourage me to pursue her so no. she doesn't know jack shiit about Yandiswa. On a lighter note, Yandi gets hotter by the minute, I know I saw her yesterday but it was as if I was seeing her for the first time. How can someone look that good without any effort? I mean she had zero make up on, not even lipstick and her hair was untied and hanging loose but she still looked amazing, she looked like she had just gotten out of a commercial for some beach shoot or whatever. I needed to hit that! When she walked out of my sister's room looking all kinds of nice, I couldn't help myself. I tried keeping the compliment to myself but the words had already left my mouth.

Me: how the fuck do you always look this good?!

I put my hand on my mouth. Asemahle laughed at me having heard what I just said

Her: excuse me?

Me: I don't have all day. Let's go

Ase: well Yandi here is my flat key, bring me the clothes that still have their tags on ok? And my shoes, Derrick knows which shoes I love

Me: we not there to pack up your whole apartment

Ase: relax. Just bring me nice things only

Her: I bet all your clothes are nice

Ase: don't flatter me boo.

They both laughed. There it was, that laugh that did things to me, it did weird shiit to me!

Me: if you girls are done?!

Yandi: see you when I get back

Ase: Melo behave

Me: excuse me?

Ase: you heard me!

I kept quiet and we walked out. She was super quiet and so I let her be. We got to the car and I unlocked the doors and she got in the

passenger seat, I was driving mom's Bentley.

Her: nice wheels

Me: they mom's.

She nodded and kept quiet.

Me: you don't talk much huh?

Her: you not easy to talk to

Me: I've seen you naked, I think that's an ice breaker

Her: like you said, you think

Me: what is your problem?

Her: I don't have any

Me: then why do you hate me so much?

Her: you threatened to hurt me

Me: I was looking out for my sister. You said you'd rather die than be with me

Her: you're an ass.

Me: and you got that from?

Her: your attitude said it all

Me: mmmh

Her: heard you'd like to bang me though.

Oh wow! are we really doing this?

Me: I think you were better when you didn't talk much

She chuckled

Her: I'm curious

Me: ok?

Her: you've been nothing but a jerk to me and rude since day one. What makes you think you could ever "bang" me?

Me: because I was taught to after what I want at a very young age Miss Gxaba and I happen to want your body

She looked outside. What was it about her? She smelled so damn good by the way

Her: well keep dreaming Mr Bess. I meant what

I said about rather dying than being with you

Me: you in a car with me. I bet you never thought that were possible but look at us now

Her: what's your plan Melokuhle?

Me: don't call me that

Her: what? Melokuhle?

Me: just don't! I don't see why you should change, you look decent enough

Her: how quick you are to change the subject

Me: is there anything you want at your place?

Her: jewellery

Me: it's not some formal dinner relax!

Her: oh

Me: I buy you a R1500 gift at NWJ and you still go on and wear these cheap Mr Price things that will ruin your skin

Her: who said it ruins my skin?

Me: I know that those aren't hickies

I said pointing at her chest, she was pink in the area where the heart of her necklace sat. she opened the mirror above her and she looked at her chest. She looked worried and scared a bit, but she didn't know she had a reaction to such.

Me: my sister used to have a reaction too so she switched to real jewellery stores for her neck pieces

Her: not all of us were fortunate enough to be Bess's

Me: yeah but your mom is a doctor meaning you loaded because you can afford Zara handbags and Sportscene sneakers

Her: are you keeping tabs on me and where I shop?

Me: I couldn't help but notice the bag you carrying looks like the one I bought for my sister yesterday

Her: mmmh I see.

She kept quiet and so did I. Metro was on and they were playing mom's song

Her: turn that up please

Me: uhhhm ok

She started singing along. The way she was carefree was just beautiful. After the song was over I turned the volume down

Her: I know I'm a terrible singer but I love that song

Me: I noticed. Stay away from singing though

She laughed and so did I. for the first time I think she and I were actually bonding and enjoying each other's company. We got to La Lucia, my sister and I live in the same complex but different areas.

Her: can your family adopt me already?!

Me: nah. Too many girls already

She laughed

Her: geeez.

We walked up and she followed behind me as we made our way to my sister's room, the stairs were exhausting. No wonder she was that skinny and fit; its these stairs. We got to her place and her housemate was there in the kitchen.

Her: Derrick Melokuhle Bess

Me: Miss Scott

My sister lived with Aunt Karen's daughter Layla Scott, she was 19. We hugged and then I put her down.

Her: wow. could it be that you finally have a girlfriend?

Us: No! we not dating

We spoke at the same time and Lay laughed at us.

Her: could have fooled me.

Me: Yandiswa this is Layla Scott; Layla this is Yandiswa Gxaba

They shook hands

Yandi: nice to meet you

Lay: likewise, For the record, you two would make a great couple

Me: it'll never happen cous. So when are you going home?

Lay: I'm flying tonight actually. Mom and dad have been on my case

Me: does that mean you won't attend our birthday party?

Lay: you know I wouldn't miss it for the world! Where's your twin?

Me: grounded. We actually here to fetch her things, well few of them

Lay: what has she done this time?

Me: drinking.

Lay: been telling her to quit

Me: she's as stubborn as both her parents that one.

Lay: my word! How's Yana? How's the pregnancy?

Me: Mahle didn't tell you? She lost the baby, last night

Lay: my word I'm so sorry

Me: its ayt. Anyway let's get these things and go

Lay: it was nice meeting you Yandiswa

Yandi: likewise, Layla

And with that we went to my sister's room which looked like a replica of the one at home. It was clean shame, if there's one thing you can count on is my sister keeping her room and closet as clean as she is.

Yandi: you guys are cousins how?

Me: we not really cousins as such. Her mother married my uncle Aluncedo, they have a daughter together so she and I are related through her sister

Her: oh... she's pretty

Me: yeah. Well that's her closet, have fun

Her: she sent both of us. I'm not going in there alone

Me: nothing's going to bite you... just so you know

Her: still

Me: why do you always have to be this difficult?

Her: and why do you always be this commanding?

Me: honestly I don't know...

Her: you know Derrick, sometimes you need to be less commanding and ask more in order for things to go the way you wish for them to

Me: you making no sense

Her: respect is a two-way street; you give it in order to receive it.

Me: kind of like going down on someone

Her: if that example works best for you then sure

She went to my sister's closet and she opened it, she went inside and switched the light on.

Her closet was so organised, I'm talking colour coordination type thing.

Me: she prefers it the way she had left it... just so you know

Her: and how are we supposed to find the clothes she wants?

I went inside and found her going through a hanger with dry cleaned things

Me: when she said tags, I think she meant clothes that have not yet been worn

Her: fine. You look for them then

She said turning to face me. I was standing right behind her, so close you could actually smell the lotion she put on her hair. Yandiswa was adorably short, she stopped right by my shoulders and she was in heels by the way; imagine if she was in flats like when she was wearing a bikini earlier on.

Me: you in the way actually

She looked up at me and moved aside. I pulled out a rack and found the clothes at the back. I don't know how she thought we would find these.

Her: and how were we suppose to find those?

Me: that's why you here with me. My sister's closet is a complicated on

Her: I see.

Me: the suitcases are in that door. I'll go fetch her shoes

Most of my sister's clothes were imported things, a whole collection for a certain season. Perks of having an aunt who's a fashion buyer slash model, she also bought me clothes. Jen was pretty much that favourite aunt who was unmarried and lived the life of travelling. And then there was uncle Damien's wife Aunt Simmy, she also sent us dozens of clothes and accessories at the end of each season. You could say we were spoilt beyond measure. Uncle Damien's dance academy was doing great, he visited it whenever he could; Layla was a student there.

Her: why so many clothes?

Me: two of our aunts are fashion buyers

Her: yep, your mom can adopt me please

I chuckled

Me: riiiiight!

I took out the shoes which I know she wanted

and then pulled out her shoe bag and put them in it.

Me: you done?

Her: yeah. We can go

I offered to take the suitcase and she shockingly didn't fight me on it, she let me take it and we headed out after saying our goodbyes to Layla. I loaded the things in the car and we drove off

Her: somethings been bothering me

Me: what?

Her: Lathitha

Me: who's that?

Her: one of my friends. She studies in the same campus as me, says you asked for her number

Me: so what's bothering you about that?

Her: she's a good girl Derrick, she's those type of girls that get in it for the long run

Me: and what type of girl are you?

Her: we not talking about me here. Please just stay away from her

Me: I'll stay away from her on one condition

Her: and what's that?

Me: sleep with me

She coughed, I couldn't help but laugh at her shame. Bet she was never ready for that now was she?

Her: excuse me?

Me: I didn't know she was your friend when I approached her and even if I did, I don't see why that bothers you

Her: it doesn't bother me; I just don't want you to hurt her that's all

Me: aren't you the sweetest friend. Friend of the year award goes to you

Her: I don't get you!

Me: what don't you get about me?

Her: why do you sleep with girls?

Me: should I sleep with guys instead?

Her: you know what I mean Derrick.

Me: I have needs and only girls can satisfy them. Your friend is flames, so are you by the way but if I can't get you then I might as well get the next best thing

Her: you such an asshole

Me: your friend is interested in me and I'm interested in her. I don't see why you should interfere and try save her.

Her: she doesn't need you in her life Melokuhle

Me: did she say that? Did she say she wants to be saved?

She shook her head

Her: no

Me: my point exactly. As a person you can only

save people who want to be saved

Her: wow.

We passed by MacD for McFlurry's and then I drove us home. She was suddenly back to not talking to me, the ice cream was a piece offering but nope; she wasn't fazed. Was she mad about me hitting on her friend? Why though? She made it clear that she wasn't interested in me. Yandiswa Gxaba was too complicated for me shame!

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:21] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

13

Ok maybe I misjudged him a bit. Still doesn't change how I feel about him though. Come to think of it this was actually the first time he and I chilled together without any of us trying to murder the other with words. I love Lathitha but I would never sleep with Melokuhle just to save her ass, besides, she wants to get burnt on her own mos. On the way I was quiet trapped by my own thoughts, how dare he even come to think that I would lower myself like that? I was mad that he would even suggest that! Derrick Bess needs to learn respect.

Him: I'm sorry

So he knows what an apology is?

Me: for what exactly?

Him: everything. From the very first time we met till now, I'm sorry Yandiswa

I looked at him, he was looking straight ahead. My god he was flames. He parked the car in front of Mac D and then he looked at me.

Him: Mc Flurry as a peace offering?

I just looked at him. He looked sincere for the very first time, I was tempted to forgive him but I figured let me let him suffer.

Him: oh kay

He walked out to buy this ice cream and then he came back with two of them, he handed me the other.

Me: thanks

Him: does that mean I'm forgiven?

I kept quiet

Him: guess not.

We drove off.

Him: which course are you studying?

Me: art

Him: well I'm doing law at Howard

Me: I know

Him: what else do you know about me?

Me: nothing.

Him: oh kay... so why art?

Me: why law?

Him: legacy. Why art?

Me: there's beauty in everything. I've loved painting since I was a little child and from there onwards my obsession moved on to taking pictures

Him: what kind of pictures?

Me: any kind. I mostly take pictures of my friends though. One day I'm going to own a studio whereby dozens of people will come to my studio to buy my art and see the person behind the beautiful creations

He was quiet probably listening to me, I felt embarrassed, I'm supposed to be mad at this guy but here I am telling him about my dreams and everything else.

Me: I'm sorry. I tend to blab

Him: I don't mind. I love listening to you talk anyway

Me: o...kay. So how's law?

Him: we talking about me now?

Me: yes, we are Mr Bess.

Him: well I can't say I was excited to do it at first but it grew on me, I mean when I passed my matric I had no plan or whatsoever but law came to my rescue.

Me: there's no such thing as not having a plan, what have you always seen yourself doing back when you were a kid?

Him: I've always seen myself sitting in an office and barking orders, having a super sexy wife to bring me random lunches accompanied by great office sex after

Me: of cause. Why am I not surprised?

He laughed. His laugh was bold and sexy, everything about him was suddenly attractive and made you want to listen to him when he spoke.

Him: hahaha what?

Me: you like barking orders. I bet 90% of your stuff would hate your guts

Him: I don't mind as long as they get the work done on time

Me: I see. So law, will it take you where you want to be? What am I asking, legacy!

He chuckled

Him: I love what I'm doing, I may seem like I hate it but I love it. Having seen the things my father has accomplished, it's made me want to be just like him. The GOD of business, but of course he wouldn't be where he is without my mom. A man with a dream deserves a woman with a vision

Me: who said that?

Him: I got it from my dad. He's been on my case about finding the right woman, with the right vision so that she and I can conquer the world together

Me: and have you found her yet or you hoping to find her between some girl's legs

He laughed at me and parked the car.

Him: where's the fun in me telling?

He got out. I was left so confused. What did that mean? Did that mean he's found her or not? I mean I know nothing solid about this guy.

Him: you coming?

He said shouting from outside. I got off the car and helped him with the other bag and then he locked the car. We went inside and found his sister Iya in the kitchen.

Her: took you guys long enough. I hope he was good to you

I smiled

Me: he was not bad. He even bought me ice cream

Him: it was a peace offering for being an ass to her after she took such good care of my sister the other day

Her: ncoooh aren't you a sweet heart. So you can buy peace offerings for Yandiswa but you can't do the same for me... I feel like you don't love me anymore

Him: not this again

Her: what? First you buy Mel a new bag and now this?

Him: jealousy doesn't suit you by the way

Her: fine whatever.

Him: tomorrow we'll go out. Just you and me

She smiled

Her: and you'll take me shopping?

Him: with what money?

Her: I don't know Bess. Make a plan, you always do

He looked at her and took some bread on her plate and ran out of the kitchen with Ase's bags

Her: I hate you

She said shouting

Him: love you more

He shouted back. I just stood there and laughed at them. They were very cute, they made me wish I had siblings of my own. Growing up as the only child was never fun, I mean yeah sure being spoilt without anyone to be jealous of you and stuff is fun but that whole thing of not having people to play with was never nice, having to leave your yard just to play with other kids was not that nice. Blood relationships are always the best in my opinion, at least they aren't that deceiving as these friends we make

today are.

Her: did he behave?

Me: yes he did. He's not such a bad guy after all

Her: trust me, he is a good guy in so many levels

Me: uhhm... Asemahle told me what you went through, I'm sorry

Her: its fine. I'm fine. Love your dress by the way

Me: thank you. I love your outfit too

She smiled. And headed out to the lounge, Mrs Bess was standing by the window all lovey dovey, sounded like she was talking to her husband

Iya: they never get enough of each other. You'd think after 20 years of marriage they'd be sick and tired already

Me: they've been married for 20years?

Her: yep and they still love each other as if they fell in love yesterday

Me: that's cute. I want that

Her: we all want it. Even Asemahle who's never had a boyfriend wants that, what about your parents?

Me: I don't know my dad

Her: you mean he died or something?

Me: I mean I've never met him, last time I checked he was alive

Her: aren't you at least curious to know him?

Me: well I've never needed him before, mom and granny have always played his role in my life all too well

Her: but still, isn't there anything missing? I'm sorry to pry

Me: no its ok. There's never been anything missing although I would like to meet him some

day, but then I can't help but feel like if he wanted to know me he would have done everything he can to find me

Her: I'm sorry.

Me: its fine. My life is actually better off

She nodded.

Ama: I see you guys are back

I nodded

Ama: don't be shy around me sweetie, I'm those awesome moms'

I couldn't hold back he laughter and so did lyana

Iya: blowing our own horn aren't we?

Me: it's not a bad thing. A little confidence aint never hurt

Iya: don't encourage her please.

Ama: whatever Yana. So Yandi, any boyfriend?

Me: uhm... I don't have one

Iya: no way!

Ama: such a beautiful girl like you? How are these boys letting you pass them by?

I smiled

Me: I'm just not interested in any of them Mah

Iya: my brother is a looker, what about him?

Ama: nah. Your brother maybe a looker but he changes girls like he changes his underpants

Me: huh?

Ama: hahaha my son and I talk, Derrick doesn't do relationships and I've accepted that, which is why I don't even want to encourage what Iyana is saying. The last thing I need is my son breaking such a beautiful lady's heart

Well she's a sweet mom.

Iya: but mom Melo could use someone like her, she seems good enough

Ama: every girl is an angel when you first meet them Yana

Me: hahaha that is true Ma. You can't just trust anybody nowadays

Iya: really? I'm trying to score you points with mom here

Me: like your mom said, Melo maybe a looker but he changes girls like he changes socks and I would never be with someone like that. Oh and he is so rude

Ama: what did he do?

Me: he doesn't have a very nice way of talking to people, he's too commanding

Iya: yep that's my brother

Ama: just like his father.

Me: I can never be with someone who just loves barking orders all because he can or he is able to

Iya: weren't you like that mom?

Ama: I called Dae into order, he was kind of like his son but I think Melo is worse

There was something about this conversation which felt a bit uncomfortable, it sounded as if Yana was rooting for me to be with her brother and her mom was also doing it in a sly way. The last thing I need is a Derrick Bess complicating my uncomplicated life thank you very much.

Him: I'm not worse than dad

I turned and Melo was standing right behind the couch I was sitting on, he startled me a bit I won't lie

Ama: who said we were talking about you?

Him: I kind of heard almost everything you guys were talking about. She's not lying mom, she would never be with me and I would never go for someone like her. She's too stubborn and too much of a princess for me, and my God she

does not know how to submit!

Iya and Amahle laughed at him and he came around and sat right next to me.

Him: no offense sweetheart.

Me: none taken

He put his feet on top of me and I pushed them off, he looked at me and shook his head. He wasn't wearing shoes so he didn't stain my dress.

Ama: where's your sister?

Him: probably getting dressed, what time you going there?

Ama: 5pm

Iya: when is dad coming back?

Ama: he said he might be back Wednesday

Him: what's the crisis anyway?

Ama: someone is suing the company for lord knows what. Some lawyer gibberish

Iya: how bad is it?

Ama: nothing your father can't take care of. By the way, Damien and Simnikiwe are moving back to SA

Iya: no way!

Ama: Sim's already bought a boutique

Him: are they going to live at grandpa's house?

Iya: pretty obvious. Granddad left it to uncle Damien

Ama: you know too much for your own good

Him: does that mean no more designer clothes?

Ama: I think so. It's not like she won't be going overseas every now and then

Iya: oh that's good.

Ama: you are such spoilt brats

Him: just like both our parents. Layla said hi

Ama: she's still around?

Him: she's leaving tonight

Ama: oh tell her I said hey.

Asemahle finally decided to join us and she was dressed simple but elegantly. She looked stunning! We chilled and spoke about anything and everything, I felt at home and not like a stranger. Iyana's husband joined us and he was too dull for her shame, he was just too much of a good guy and he didn't talk much or maybe that's because he and her have recently lost a baby? But Iya was coping mos so I don't get it... Eventually it was time to go, Iya drove off with her fiancé and I drove with Mrs Bess and the twins; they argued about the front chair such that Mrs Bess felt it best that Derrick drives and she sits in the front seat. It was funny watching those too go at each other. The more time I spent with this family, the more I wished I had siblings of my own.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:21] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES
LOVE*

.

.

14-Melo

Dinner went well, Yandiswa felt at home or at least that's what it looked like. The family liked her, but then again who could blame them?! She was actually a sweet person who stood by what she says. She was an amazing soul, she's not who I thought she was and maybe I was kind of disrespectful to her. After dinner we drove off to my home, I wasn't planning on sleeping at home tonight so I dropped the fam off and went to my car with Yandiswa of cause, seeing that we lived in the same neighbourhood it was only fair I take her to her place. We were in my car

driving to La Lucia

Her: your family is amazing

Me: tell me about it, they seemed to like you

She blushed and looked the other side. There was just something about this girl sitting beside me, I wanted to grab her then and there and kiss her for dear life... that's how beautiful she looked.

Her: thank you I guess

Me: you not such a bitch after all

Her: oh... you thought I was a bitch?

Me: in a way yes. But I don't think you are anymore

She chuckled

Her: you actually not such an ass after all

Me: you thought I was an ass?

Her: I still think you are but you not that big of an ass

Me: you don't know me well enough to judge me like that

Her: I spent half the day with you today and you not what I thought you were

Me: and what did you think I was?

Her: it doesn't matter. My opinion of you has changed now

Me: what-ever!

We sat in silence as I drove off

Me: any boyfriend?

Her: I don't date

Me: there's no such thing. What did men ever do to you?

Her: we really going there?

Me: I just want to know who I'm driving home

Her: my last boyfriend broke up with me or I broke it off, I don't know which is which, it ended because I wouldn't have sex with him

Me: how long had you guys been together?

Her: well officially we were going to finish a year together but we've known each other for 4 years

Me: if you've known him that long, why not have sex with him?

Her: I was still a virgin. I wasn't ready for sex

Me: ouch! So you starved the poor guy for a whole year?

Her: when you put it like that it just sounds bad

Me: it is bad. You can't do that to a nigga

Her: of cause you would say that.

Me: I'm not this asshole you make me out to be

Her: I know

Me: huh?

Her: anyway. What really ticked me off and made me go nuts was him putting a picture of he and I as his WhatsApp profile picture and

then accompanied it with a status “girl you don’t even know all the b*tches I let go for you”

Me: that’s that Chris Brown and Jamie Foxx song right?

Her: yes, but that’s not something you say to someone you claim to love

Me: but it was just a status

Her: which meant something. I told him to go to those b*tches he let go for me and I’ll go to the niggas I let go for him

I chuckled. Was she for real? Ok but then again the guy behaved like a jerk. Who would do that? Who breaks up with someone because they wouldn’t sleep with them? I’m no saint but I wouldn’t do that to someone. If you don’t want to have sex with me then cool, I’ll get it elsewhere. This is why I don’t do relationships!

Me: you’re something else you know that?

Her: ok Mr smarty. What should I have done?

Me: firstly, you ended things, not him

Her: I said he can go and he responded with
“cool”

Me: only because you pushed him away
Yandiswa. Anyway as I was saying, I think you
guys had communication problems. Had you
two spoke of the sex issue then you guys would
probably be still together. You girls have a
tendency of flirting and leading the guy on and
when he thinks he'll finally get some, you bail on
him

Her: I hear you. Anyway I'm over it, I'm going to
meet a nice guy when I'm done whoring

Me: huh?

Her: nothing

We were by the robots not too far from her
place. What did she mean when she's done
whoring? Why did she want to whore in the first
place? I can't lie I was disappointed really. I'm

no saint but the last thing I'd want is her
whoring, it's not a good life and she might just
get hurt by doing such. I looked at her squinting
my eyes

Her: what?

Me: nothing

I shook my head and continued driving. We got
to her place and I parked the car and she got off

Her: thanks

Me: you welcome

She walked to the gate and got in and then
waved and I waved back then drove off. On my
way to the flat I got a call from Lathitha. I took
the call

//Me: hello?

Her: uhhm hi Melo

Me: hey how are you?

Her: I'm good and how are you?

Me: I'm good thanks. To what do I owe this call?

Her: well I'm at my place and I'm super bored

Me: ok? What can I do?

Her: can I come over to your place for a visit maybe?

Me: Lathitha look, I'm not the guy for you. I'm a jerk and I don't do relationships and you seem like a nice girl who does serious stuff with serious guys. The last thing I want to do is hurt you

Her: what? Where's all this coming from?

Me: this is coming from a good place actually. Someone cares about you and I happen to care about that someone. The last thing I want to do is to hurt that person by hurting you

Her: oh

Me: I'm really so...//

She cut the call on me. Oh well I was just trying

to be nice to her. I got to my place and then called mama Bess to tell her I arrived home safely and she said cool I should stay safe and take care of myself. I got on top of my bed and logged in on WhatsApp and looked through my contacts and I noticed I had Yandiswa as a contact, I checked her profile picture out and dare I say she was flames. It was a picture of her at my crib wearing a bikini with a status saying she had an awesome Sunday. Just as I was chilling like that a text came through from Lucas saying we should go out with Siya, I was shockingly not in the mood to go out so I stayed in doors for the night. The next day I woke up and showered then went in to BESS, I got a text from dad asking me to go in and just oversee that things go accordingly. I decided to head out to go grab some lunch at a restaurant down the road, I found a booth and waited for my order. This girl walked up to me.

Her: hello

Me: hi

I looked up at her and man was she flames!

Her: may I join you?

Me: I'm actually waiting for my order

Her: I'm not asking you out, I'm just asking to sit with you that's all

I chuckled, she was being forward.

Her: Nice watch

Me: thank you

Her: where can I get one like it?

Me: LA or New York

Her: rich kid...

I couldn't hold back the laugh. She was very pretty, her black body hugging dress sat very well on her, there was something about her that made you want to get to know her more

Me: nah not really

Her: whatever you say

“Mr Ngesi”

Said someone shouting behind the counter.

Me: I should go

Her: Mr Ngesi?

Me: sadly, yes

She smiled revealing a dimple. She was so adorable, Yandiswa was a combination of beautiful and sexy but she, she was plain beautiful.

Her: will I ever see you again Mr Ngesi?

Me: I don't know. will I see you?

Her: here's my card and you be the one to decide

Me: Kate

I said reading from the card. It had her number and social media details with nothing solid to go on. She looked very young, almost as thou

she was 18 or younger. I nodded and went to take my order and walked right back to the office. I know I said I don't do relationships but good God! Business wasn't as hectic plus Aunty Siya had everything under control. Home time I headed over to the Bess mansion and was greeted by my ever so beautiful big sister.

Me: hey sis

Her: hey brother, how are you?

Me: I'm good and how are you?

Her: I'm bored. I miss work

Me: sadly, mom put you on leave

Her: forced leave

Me: you need it

Her: I'm perfectly fine really

Me: nah fam. I think you just hiding behind that smile. Losing a child is not something you get over just like that, you need to deal with the pain

sis. If you don't deal with it now, then it's going to catch up with you at a later stage and trust me it won't be nice

Her: Melo I don't know how to deal with this. I've never lost a child before, there's no manual on how to handle these kind of things

Me: you don't need a manual in order to know how to deal with pain. Mom got by through therapy, try that

Her: me? Therapy? I'm too black for such things

Me: try it out and it might just be what you've been needing

With that I walked out to search the house, Mama Bess and my twin weren't home, I walked back into the kitchen to Yana

Me: where are the other occupants of this house?

Her: mom dragged Mahle to work today

Me: that's sounds ouch

Her: I know right. part of her punishment, she gets to be mom's PA for the rest of the weeks until mom sees she's... what's the word?

Me: fit and responsible?

Her: yes, responsible. Mahle told me she got the talk last night

Me: damn!

Her: yep. They spent hours at the parliament I thought they would never come out

We call mom's room the parliament. That's where you get the pep talk and every other kind of talk really.

Me: how bad was it?

Her: she came out with her eyes red. You can only imagine

Me: eish and Mama Bess has a way of making anyone cry

Her: I doubt our sister will ever get drunk again

after last night. Mom literally poured her heart out to her. Told her why she worries the way she does and why she's this over protective of any of us and all of that

Me: damn she really got it huh? let's hope she listened

Her: trust me, she did.

Me: nice.

I led us to the lounge taking my jacket off.

Her: hey what's this?

She said holding a piece of paper

Her: who's Kate?

Me: Kate?

Her: says right here

Me: oh that's some girl I met at the restaurant down the street from BESS

Her: is she pretty?

Me: she's flames.

Her: compared to Yandiswa?

Me: we can't compare the two. Kate is white meaning there'll be a few assets she's lacking. She's some sort of a Rihanna, she's super skinny but she has a very nice body and a dimple too

Her: so what does this mean?

Me: it means nothing

Her: where does this leave Yandiswa?

Me: Yandiswa has made it pretty clear that she will never be with me sis so forget her

Her: you never even tried her

Me: she's not my type sis. She's too... she's too independent for me

Her: wow! and what about Kate? Is she submissive?

Me: I wouldn't know. I need to try her out first

Her: why can't you just settle for one girl?

Me: I just might. Kate seems like a keeper

Her: really now?

Me: I'll call her tonight and I'll take her out and see what kind of girl she is. She does seem different from what I'm used to thou

Her: I see.

Me: don't judge. You know this is how I roll

Her: I don't see why you don't go for Yandiswa

Me: she's not for me ok! Anyway tell mom I was here ok, I'll see her tomorrow

Her: you not staying?

Me: nope. By sissy

I took my car keys and the card on the table and walked out saving Kate's details on my phone and then went into my car and drove to my place.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:21] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES
LOVE*

.

.

15

Last night was amazing. The Bess family is amazing and everyone in it. After Melo dropped me off I headed straight to my room and hit the sack. I was woken up yours truly jumping on top of my bed. I don't understand why grown ass people would wake you up like they waking up a 5-year-old.

Me: Naledi what do you want?

Her: wake up honey I miss you!

Me: go away I'm tired.

Her: oh well. I guess I have to eat this lindt

chocolate alone

Me: ok ok ok I'm up

She knows how much I love lindt and magnums. Those are the few things you can bribe with and you would have won my heart. I uncovered myself and she was sitting on top of stomach.

Me: get inside

Her: thank you lady.

She said joining me under the covers and she opened up the box of chocolate.

Me: well?

She just smiled like a retard.

Me: details

Her: last night was amazing!

Me: you look like it was amazing. What happened?

Her: we made love.

Me: you really like this one huh?

Her: you have no idea friend. Last night he took me to this restaurant outside Durban, there was only a chef and a waiter and just the two of us. We spoke all night about anything and everything. Next year he is moving to South Africa Durban. Not for me but because he's been looking to come back here and stay permanently. Anyway after all that we went to the beach and just sat there and talked and talked and talked. Later on we went to the hotel he was booked in and he wined and dined me and then we made love, the sex was mind blowing my friend none like I've ever had before. He's coming back again beginning December and this time around he'll stay for a week

Me: oh wow you really made an impression

Her: you know I always do

Me: does this mean you clearing the roster?

She nodded smiling. The last time I ever saw

Ledi this happy was I don't know. As much as friends can make you happy, a man can make you smile in a way no friend can ever make you smile. I was happy for her and I was also glad that she'll stop sleeping with random man from now onwards. I was a happy sister and friend because that's what we are to each other. I kissed her cheek and hugged her tight

Her: I can't breathe

Me: I don't care. I'm happy for you

She tried to break free and she finally did.

Her: you are trying to kill me aren't you

Me: this means you'll stop whoring around

Her: that's if he provides and takes care of my every need

Me: Naledi!

Her: I make no promises

Me: whatever

Her: so how did your day with the Bess go?

Me: it was amazing. I had dinner with them

Her: them or Derrick?

Me: the family. They are such amazing people

Her: the kind of family you would get married to right?

Me: screw you!

Her: I'm joking. So have you changed your mind about Yummy Melo?

Me: nope. Ok maybe a little

Her: will you bang him?

Me: what? No!

Her: come one. Just once

Me: he actually said he wanted to bang me

Her: I knew it. the way he looked at you the other day said it all

Me: wow!

Her: so? When is the bang date?

Me: there is none because I wouldn't bang him.
It'll ruin the relationship I have with his family

She looked at me like I was mentally deranged
and then laughed so hard.

Her: how is sleeping with Melo going to ruin
your relationship with his family? Do you want
to bang his family too?

Me: screw you. Besides, Lathitha likes him and
there's a girl code against that

Her: you people and girl codes. Derrick wants to
bang you and not her

Me: well he knows we friends and I warned him
to stay away from her

Her: now that he knows you guys are friends; he
might just bang her to get your attention or to
get to you. That guy likes you and his eyes say
so

Me: he's always wearing shades, what makes

you think that?

Her: as much as I'm a whore, I still know when a man likes a girl. He's actions always give him away

Me: right. let's go make breakfast, I'm starving

Her: just think about it ok?

Me: fine.

With that we went to make breakfast and when we were done we ate and minutes later Anita walked in with messy hair, she had that whole "I just had sex" look. But she didn't look happy either.

Ledi: well somebody didn't come home last night

Nita: not now Ledi please. I'm tired

Me: breakfast?

Nita: I already ate

Ledi: yep and dick can make you super full

Nita: are you kidding me right now

Ledi: didn't I tell you it was addictive?

Me: come on Ledi let it go

Nita sat down on the kitchen counter chairs.

Nita: how was your lunch date with Asemahle?

Me: it was great. Infact it ended up being dinner at the Dr Amber's house

Nita: so what? You like part of the family now or something?

Me: ha ha ha. Nope it was a friendly invite and Mrs Bess doesn't take no for an answer

Ledi: so Nita, how was it?

Nita: painful

Ledi: it will get better with time. Trust me

Nita: yeah

Me: I hope you using protection Nita

Her: I am... well we kinds of got carried away

this morning and we didn't

Me: morning after pill?

Ledi: you need to go on contraceptives babe

Nita: he'll bring the pill later on. Relax guys

Ledi: why couldn't you guys just pass by the chemist?

Me: yeah why didn't ya'll?

Nita: it slipped our minds you guys. Anyway I'm off to bed

With that she walked out and left me and Ledi speechless.

Ledi: oh kay!

Me: you can say that again. What's with the attitude?

Her: I don't know. I wonder what Bonke has done now

She took out her phone from her gown

Me: what are you doing?

Her: finding out what Bonke did to our young Nita

Me: he's coming over later isn't he?

Her: so?

She put the ringing phone on loud speaker and a while later he answered.

//Him: Naledi

Her: what did you do to Anita?

Him: what did she say I did to her?

Her: don't play smart with me Bonke. What did you do?

Him: I don't have time for this Naledi

Her: you do know that if I hear it from Nita whatever I would have done to you will be worse

Him: what could you possibly do to me?

Me: Buddy what's going on?

Him: we got into an argument.

Her: before sexing her or after?

Him: if you must know. it happened after.

Where is Nita?

Me: she's in her room. What did you argue about?

Him: it's between me and her ok.

Her: good God if you darn did anything to hurt her I will murder you Bonke. You won't leave this house alive

Him: screw you Naledi//

Her: did he just drop the call on me?

Me: yeah. Come let's go to Nita, she needs us

With that she took her plate and we went up to Anita's room, we knocked but there was no response so we let ourselves in only to find the bed empty and water running in the bathroom

so that's where we went to look for her and we found her sitting down on the shower with her knees up crying as the water hit her head down to her feet. Ledi got in and closed the tap and I walked in with a big towel.

Me: baby what's wrong?

I said hugging her with the towel and trying to help her get up with the help of Ledi

Ledi: honey what did he do?

We walked out of the shower, she was freezing cold so we opened the blankets for her and then we joined her in bed and cuddled her.

Her: he's been cheating on me

Ledi: I'm sorry what?

Her: we were in bed talking when his phone rang, he was hesitant to answer but the person was persistent. He's been sleeping with Emelie

Me: which Emelie?

Her: Emelie Lime.

Ledi: that bitch!

Me: how did you find out they were sleeping together?

I know that maybe I'm not supposed to ask but I rather have all the facts before everything else.

Her: his phone was loud enough. she was asking him when he's coming over and calling him "baby". I asked him what was going on and he told me that the two of them are exes with benefits, said he doesn't love her, they just screw occasionally and that's it

Ledi: are you fucking kidding me?

Me: I'm so sorry friend

Her: how could I have not seen this coming?
Am I stupid or blind or both?

Me: no. they just hid it that well, you not stupid

Her: I thought he loved me

Me: men do a lot of things that make you question their love. I can't speak upon the things he has done but he did love you

Ledi: bullshit! If he loved her then he would have never slept with her friend. Bonke is an asshole for that he deserves everything bad that's coming his way

Me: no Ledi don't be like that. That's the last thing Anita needs to hear

When you going through such a period, the last thing you want to hear is someone cursing the person that did you damage. I know cause I've been hurt to this point Anita was in and all she needed was comfort and love.

Her: I just don't understand why he would do this to me. Did I not love him enough? is it because I didn't have sex with him on time

Me: it's not your fault. It's his. He screwed up and not you. You can't force yourself to have sex with someone when you know you not

ready. It's your virginity at the end of the day and not his

Ledi: even if you had sex with him earlier on, he probably would have cheated on you still. Some men just don't get enough, it's called being greedy. Bonke never deserved you to begin with ok.

She just kept quiet and cried even more, Ledi and I just comforted her until she fell asleep and when she was finally sleeping we walked out. Ledi was pissed, so was I but Naledi was on a mission. She was ready to kill. That's the kind of friend I have, her chill levels are always a negative where her friends and family are concerned.

Her: that bastard

Me: I can't believe he would do such a thing

Her: he deserves to rot in hell

Me: don't do anything we will both regret

Her: and what is that my friend?

Me: don't kill him!

Her: I make no promises

We washed the dishes while chatting about stuff.

Me: the conversation with Iyana and seeing how they are as siblings made me want to know my dad

Her: no Yandiswa. That man left you and he never looked back

Me: I just want to know why, what if I have siblings

Her: what if you don't?

Me: would it really be that bad?

We put the dishes in the dryer and then poured some wine and went to the lounge with a plate of meat and a knife to cut it.

Her: I don't understand why you want to know

the bastard. He left for a reason

Me: a reason I want to know

Her: at least talk to your mom first. Remember the last time we searched for the guy we reached a dead end

Me: I know. what if this time I get lucky?

Just then the bell rang.

Her: I'll get it

Me: no I will

Her: it could be Bonke so let me

Me: you not going to him alone

Her: fine let's go.

She took the knife and she walked to the kitchen. On the way we were arguing about the knife situation. I opened the door.

Me: what do you want?

Him: I'm here for Anita

Ledi: haven't you done enough?

She said playing with the knife in the hand

Him: I just want to explain

I moved aside

Him: thank you

Ledi: there's nothing to explain Bonke. You've been sleeping with our friend

Him: this is between Anita and I

Me: and Emelie too right? I mean she's just your fuck buddy right?

Him: I'm not doing this with you guys.

He said approaching the door to the stairs but Ledi stood in her way

Her: you not going anywhere near her. Did I not tell you that you wouldn't leave this house alive?

Him: what you going to do huh? stab me with a knife?

Her: a little lesson aint never hurt nobody

She said point the knife to him

Him: oh please

Me: come one Naledi

Him: listen to your friend. We both know you don't have the guts.

Her: why do people underestimate me?

Him: because we all know you'd never do it.
take your best shot

He said opening his arms and patting his heart.
Ledi shook her head and smiled

Him: told you. Now move

I don't know when or how she reached his pants
but that's where she shoved the knife.

Me: Naledi!

Bonke was screaming in pain

Her: told him not to underestimate me!

With that she went to the sink to wash her hands. I was stuck in the moment not knowing what to do or say. Nita rocked up rubbing her eyes

Her: what's going on? What's with the n...

She didn't even finish her question when she saw Bonke laying on the floor with his hands on the bloody knife

Her: oh my god what happened? Somebody call an ambulance please

She said kneeling in front of him

Naledi looked at me as if asking if I was really going to be that dumb. Searched for my phone but couldn't find it so I ran to the lounge and dialled for the ambulance which arrived after its sweet precious time. Nita went to the hospital with her boyfriend and left me with Ledi.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:21] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

16-Melo

Normally I'm not this excited to get a girl's number but with Kate it was different, it's like I just couldn't wait to finally talk to her after the long day I've had and the weekend that I've had. I was actually interested in talking to her and hearing her voice again, unlike the other girls I call for a random hook up. Wait could I be falling for her? I decide to FaceTime Kate, I was bored and nothing interesting was playing on tv oh and I was super tired from today. I sat on the couch and logged into the Wi-Fi and got onto FaceTime and searched for Kate's contact and found it then called her

//Me: Hey you. Since you don't know my name, its Derrick but you can call me Melo

Her: as in Marshmallow?

Me: no! as in Melo

Her: why Melo?

Me: its short for my name, which I won't tell you so don't ask

Her: is it that embarrassing?

Me: no. just that mom calls me by it when she's mad at me

Her: but I want to call you by my own special nickname

Me: which is?

Her: Marshmallow

Me: call me that and I'll call you Jelly bean

Her: hell NO I'm prettier than those things

Me: then come up with something better

Her: Mr Rolex

Me: why that?

Her: the watch you had on when we met

Me: ok fair enough. how about I call you body hugging

Her: you noticed the dress I was wearing?

Me: only because you noticed me first... stalker

Her: the restaurant was full ok

Me: whatever you say Miss Chatty

Her: what?

Me: I called you Miss chatty. You talk a lot, thought you never stopping

Her: what? No that's not true

Me: it's not a bad thing because you have a nice voice

Her: he gives compliments... ow wow!

Me: that's cause you not boring so chill out

Her: Lol I know right?!

Me: let's not get cocky now

Her: Hahahaha I know the boring part did not even once cross your mind. Oh yeah you kind of cool too Mr

Me: hahaha... thank you but I know I'm cool. Most people think that I'm cool Because I'm so cool....

Her: Feeling Cocky aren't we?!

Me: always. What are you up to?

Her: I am watching a movie... and what are you doing?

Me: Owh nice, which one...!? I'm about to cook

Her: The Perfect Match. You can cook?

Me: why do you sound so surprised?

Her: you don't strike me as somebody who cooks

Me: you don't strike me as a sucker for

romance but here we are

Her: it's a nice movie

Me: what's so nice about it?

Her: everything. The way he falls in love with her and yet she's getting married to another. It's cute

Me: that is mean. I'm starting to question the kind of lady you are

Her: stick around and you'll find out

Me: you not engaged are you?

Her: I'm only 18. Chill

Me: so what course are you studying?

Her: I'm studying Radiography at DUT Ritson

Me: nice. Beauty and brains

Her: I hope you aren't burning anything on my account

Me: I haven't even started. You too talkative for

me to cook

Her: I knew it. you can't cook

Me: stick around and you'll find out

Her: are you flirting with me?

Me: are you flirting with me?

Her: typical black person. Answering a question with a question

Me: who said I was black?

Her: who said you weren't?

Me: and you say I'm the typical black here

Her: oh wow! so what are you going to eat tonight?

Me: how about I have you

Her: oh my god! No!

Me: relax it was just a joke. I'll order pizza or go eat at my mom's house

Her: somebody is a mama's boy

Me: you can tell a lot about a man judging by the relationship he has with his mom

Her: mmmmh....

Me: yeah. So how's your movie?

Her: I stopped watching. Thanks to you

Me: I don't hear you complaining

Her: I'm enjoying your company

Me: I'm flattered. So what's your full name?

Her: its Kate Romer.

Me: is that your Facebook name too?

Her: I deactivated that a long time ago

Me: wow me too.

Her: you don't have to say that to impress me

Me: what? Girl please. I know you already impressed

Her: you too cocky

Me: have you watch "The Revenant"?

Her: what's that?

Me: the movie that actually made Leonardo win his first Oscar

Her: Hahahahaha I'm laughing cause I'm thinking of all those jokes about him not winning an Oscar... and now that we had all lost hope, he suddenly wins one. That is just sad and depressing... it must be a Great movie

Me: hahaha well you silly.... yea, it's too nice. I was watching like with my jaw dropped the whole time. I knew he'll win it someday, it's just that his time to win it was long overdue

Her: Except he almost did not win it thou...

Me: Did is better than almost thou

Her: Lol yeah you right...

Me: so miss noticed me

Her: come on are we really still on that?

Me: I can't drop it. a pretty lady hit on me.

Normally it's the other way round

Her: hahahahahahaha When last did I laugh this hard, you are entertaining you know that

Me: hahaha let's face it, you can't win the cockiness game with me, I'm cocky in real life. I know, right!?! Too entertaining. You fun too, haven't enjoyed chatting with someone like this in ages, people be boring AF

Her: Hahaha sweetheart I'm only letting you win because I'm sleepy now and I have classes tomorrow morning... school is a drag

Her: As for me being fun... it comes natural. I was born like this... I have to stand out from these boring people you associate yourself with

Me: Well, I'm sleepy too actually, pretty sure I got sleepy before you did but didn't want to get you sad with the bad news.

Her: hahaha it's not a competition Mr Cocky. Plus, you still haven't eaten

Me: I know you don't want to sleep coz I'm too good to be true, feels like a dream talking to me already

Her: oh wow!

Me: stay with me until I finish making a sandwich at least?

Her: now you just being a cry baby

I put the phone and speaker and switched to call mode while I prepared my sandwich

Her: a warning would have been much much better

Me: oh I'm sorry. I didn't think you would mind

Her: one minute we face timing and the next you switch to audio, not fair

Me: I'm sorry

Her: whatever. So what are you making?

Me: hotdogs. Want some?

Her: sorry, I'm still full

Me: from the lunch you ate around 12. Quit tripping

Her: are you always like this?

Me: how?

Her: crazy

Me: you bring out the crazy in me

Her: owh wow

Me: done making my super.

Her: finally

Me: yeah. You can go to bed now

Her: you suck!

Me: Goodnight....

Her: Goodnight Cocky

Me: goodnight Miss Cocky//

The call left me in a very good mood. The time was only past 7 and she was calling it a night? I guess radiography is a bitch huh? Anyway after

the call I decided to hit the shower, as I was about to shower there was a knock on the door. I went to go get it and it was Siya and Lucas with pizza and some booze.

Me: really guys

Luc: your ribs are not attractive. Go put a t-shirt on

They pushed me out of the way.

Me: I think there's a law against this sort of thing

Siya: what thing is that? Visiting a friend

Me: no. rocking up unannounced at a guy's place. What If I had a girl over?

Siya: well do you have one over?

I was defeated. I shook my head

Luc: if you had one, you wouldn't have answered the door

Siya: or you would have answered with a boner

Me: screw you guys! Can I at least go take a shower and meet you guys in the lounge?

Luc: just as long as you cover those ribs up

Me: this is what a 6 pack actually looks like cousin. But you wouldn't know

Siya and I laughed at him.

Him: screw you Bess!

With that I walked up to my room to shower and wear comfy clothes. When I was done I went to join them and they were playing Fifa. They came over to my place to flipping play FIFA? I hit them at the back of their heads

Them: what the fuck?

Me: you come over to my house to play FIFA?

Luc: you got the best TV

Siya: I see nothing wrong with that

Me: of cause you wouldn't. been telling ya'll asses to move out of ya'll parents' house

Siya: why waste money when they live in the same town as you

Me: until then, you crash here right? this is not a hotel

Luc: it looks like one. Grab a beer and join us

I took a beer and joined them. I logged on WhatsApp and started a conversation with Yandiswa, I was bored and Kate was not online.

*/me: Hey there

Her: uhhm hi?

Her responses weren't so quick and it was annoying, I'm a fast texter and a fast responder so I don't like to be kept waiting when I don't keep people waiting

Me: don't tell me you never saved my number? To block it at least

Her: uhhm not to be rude but who's this?

Me: Mr DMB

Her: Melokuhle?

Me: the one and only

Her: why are you texting me?

Me: because I'm bored and you're online. Why do people text other people?

Her: sorry I just wasn't expecting a text from you that's all

Me: like I said, I was bored and you're online. What are you up to?

Her: cleaning actually

Me: at this time?

Her: there was an accident

Me: if you killed someone I don't want to know

Her: what? No! ok maybe Naledi killed someone

Me: what do you mean?

Her: Naledi stabbed Bonke in the balls

Me: Bonke?

Her: Anita's boyfriend

Me: what? No fucking ways. Why?

Her: he's been sleeping with our other friend
Emelie

Me: how many friends do you have?

Her: about 7. Anyway you missing the point.
Could she get arrested for that?

Me: well if he pressed charges but she would be
granted bail. The guy is not dead right?

Her: yeah but he can never have kids...

Me: your friend is hard-core! She's a G

Her: he provoked her

Me: what did he do? I mean nobody deserves to
get their balls stabbed

Her: he hurt Anita!

Me: you virgins are complicated I swear!

Her: yeah whatever. What are you doing?

Me: I'm chilling with Siya and my cousin Lucas

Her: tell em I say hi

Me: oh wow. quick response, does that mean you done?

Her: I've been done actually, you just not the only person I'm chatting to

Me: oh wow. real nice

Her: what?

Me: it's like roles are reversed and I'm suddenly the nice one here

Her: did I hurt your feelings? Do you want a hug?

Me: sarcasm looks terrible on you by the way

Her: right back at you Melokuhle

Me: could you please stop calling me that!

Her: knowing that it annoys you gives me joy in my heart

Me: if I didn't know any better I would say you

want me

Her: good thing you know better

Me: why are you so mean to me?

Her: I'm sorry, this is just how I am... not a nice person

Me: my family would disagree, even I would disagree

Her: oh?

Me: what game are you playing at?

Her: there is no game

Me: yeah there is. Things are better for you when we... I don't know, at each other's throats?

Her: why are you being so emotional? I'm just playing with you Melo.

Me: could have fooled me

Her: I'm sorry. Let's start over

Me: how about lunch? Tomorrow

Her: any day but tomorrow

Me: why?

Her: I have a job interview

Me: oh wow that's great. What kind of job?

Her: to photograph a party this Saturday

Me: I hope you get the job

Her: me two. Fingers crossed

Me: fingers crossed.

Her: anyway. We'll talk again tomorrow, it's been a long day

Me: goodnight then

Her: nighty night Melokuhle//

I logged out. Maybe Yandiswa and I can be good friends after all. She's not such a bad person. The guys were still playing their match and I was super tired so I called it a night, I prayed for Yaya to get that job before sleeping.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:22] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

17

Well yesterday was unexpected. I mean I knew Naledi was capable but to go for the balls though? My friend is a G no doubt! I guess Zuko was lucky because he and her are kind of friends or else she would have done the same to him or even worse, but anyway their friendship ended when Zuko and I ended things. Bonke was fine but I bet you he'll never cheat again. Anita was not talking to any of us and none of us cared really, well its not like I did not care but I was too busy worried about my

interview tomorrow and making sure my portfolio speaks volumes for me. My interview was at 12pm meaning I had more than enough time to prepare and make sure that everything was A-Okay! I went to shower and then went to my closet to pick out an outfit, I went with an oversized light jersey and a pencil skirt with pink heels. My outfit was nude pink jersey, white skirt a pink hand bag. I wasn't planning on tying my hair for the interview. When I came out of my closet I was met by Naledi going through my portfolio sitting on top of my bed.

Her: you need to enlarge this picture

It was a picture of her side of her face, it was black and white, it was a beautiful picture

Me: well it's you so if you want to enlarge it you can go ahead

Her: come one, love me for once

Me: you know I love you always

Her: right. so are you ready?

Me: this is my first real job interview... I don't know dude

Her: you are going to knock them dead

Me: they want me for a party

Her: what kind of party?

Me: kiddies party I think; I didn't get much details really

Her: I hope it's not a scheme

Me: come one, it was hooked up by my lecturer so chill honey boo

Her: fine... whatever. Good luck my honey

Me: thank you bubu. Have you heard from Anita?

Her: she's been locked up in her room since last night

Me: you have to apologise

Her: I did her a favour. She should be thanking

me

Me: no. you killed all hopes of Bonke ever having kids dude

Her: that'll teach him to never mess with my friend again

Me: come on don't be evil now Ledi. Apologise to them both

Her: I don't even understand why Anita is mad though

Me: why don't you go ask her and find out

Her: great. Real great.

Just as we were chatting like that my phone rang and missy jumped for it.

Her: why would be Melo calling you?

Me: I don't know. can I have my phone please?

It was still in her hand and this girl answered it and put him on speaker

//her: Yandiswa's phone hello?

Him: uhhhm hi. May I speak to Yaya please

Her: pet names already. Aren't you forward Mr Bess

Me: Naledi come on

She gave me my phone and I removed it from speaker.

Me: sorry about that

Him: no need to apologise

Me: so to what do I owe the pleasure?

Him: I called to wish you luck on today

Me: aren't you sweet...

Him: I have my days. Don't get used to it

Me: trust me I wasn't planning to. How are you?

Him: hung over. How are you?

Me: I'm great. It's in the middle of the week

Him: remember I told you the guys rocked up unannounced

Me: oh yeah... what about work?

Him: I just got to the office by the way

Me: I see....

Him: anyway. I should go, bye Yaya and knock em dead

Me: Yaya? That's a first

Him: what? You hate it?

Me: nobody has ever called me that

Him: then I'll be the first and last

Me: bye Melo and enjoy your day

Him: enjoy yours too and knock em dead

Me: will try//

Her: "Yaya"

Me: why are you still here again?

I said hitting her with a pillow

Her: you like him!

Me: what? No!

Her: yeah. You do and its ok friend, I don't blame you

Me: what? No

Her: you were literally blushing and all flirtatious

Me: you are seeing your own things. Melo is a friend

Her: really now?

She gave me that unconvinced look... we've been friends for so long, you'd think she knows me by now. I feel nothing for Melokuhle Bess

Me: yes, really. He's not my type

Her: sexy and mysterious is not your type?

Me: he's not mysterious. He's a looker that's all

Her: right.... have it your way. I got a call from Mr Porsche

Me: what is Mr Porsche's name anyway?

Her: his name is Reece Wither

Me: nice... so what was the call about?

Her: just checking up on me and how I woke up, he asked about my plans for the day and pretty much all of that

Me: he's a keeper

Her: he asked me to fly over this weekend if I'm not busy

I screamed in excitement and so did she

Me: I literally have no words. This guy is really taken by you huh?

Her: you think I would fly to LA alone? Nah fam what if he kidnaps me

Me: so you not going?

Her: nope. If he wants to see me again he will come to me

Me: you are something else you know that

Her: people are creepy out there

Me: fine don't go babe

Her: but the shopping my friend

Me: I give up! Come let's go make breakfast

Her: better yet let's go eat out. It's a while

I screamed and we both started jumping up and down on the bed excited. After all that madness I accompanied her to her room to wash and I picked out an outfit for her and from there on we went to get dressed in my room and we took dozens of pictures and then we headed downstairs. Nita was in the kitchen making something to eat.

Me: morning

She kept quiet and didn't say jack shit. Ledi walked out leaving me with a moody Nita

Me: I don't know what I did to you but this? This whole attitude you giving me right now, it won't get you anywhere sweetheart. Ledi and I are going out for breakfast in case you would like to

join us

Her: you don't get it do you? You stood there and did nothing

Me: excuse me! I cannot believe that you are going to stand there and defend him after he has cheated on you with your own friend. How dare you choose some asshole over your own friend Anita?

Her: I'm not choosing anyone here Yandiswa. You and Naledi had no right to even get yourselves involved

I chuckled in disbelief. She was high on something right? I mean wasn't she the one crying on my chest just yesterday morning and here she is now acting like a bitch.

Me: wow. I knew that the power of dick was strong. But this? I didn't think it would make you this crazy shame. Bye Anita

With that I walked out to an impatient Naledi

who has been hooting for the past few minutes I was with Anita. I opened the door and got in.

Me: really Naledi?

Her: what?

Me: let's just go

Her: and then? What's wrong with you?

Me: uAnita zimza entloko isperms soze uve (the sperms have gone straight to her head I swear!)

Naledi's laugh was that annoying laugh that made you want to slap the daylights out of her, especially when you not in the mood for it. she looked at me and laughed again before starting the car.

Her: what has the poor kid done?

Me: she mad cause we intervened yesterday

Her: wasn't she the one busy crying because of her asshole of a man

Me: my point exactly. So where are we eating?

Her: Wimpy... it's been a while since I had their breakfast

Me: awesome then. Your turn to pay though

Her: I know. chill

We always took turns in paying the bill when we went out rather than that whole splitting it business, you find that all of you are carrying cards because carrying cash is not safe so things were just better this way. We had our breakfast and it was nice. After all that we went window shopping to buy time and then lunch time Naledi went to drop me off by this other restaurant for my interview. I was early and suddenly nervous. The lady I was meeting came dressed up formal, I'm talking suits and all.

Her: hello. I'm Thembi Mbira

Me: Yandiswa Gxaba

We shook hands.

Her: finally, a face to the name

Me: excuse me?

Her: Anele has been going on and on. She says you one of the best in her class

Me: thank you I guess. But I'll let my portfolio speak for itself

She smiled.

Her: I think I like you already. I'm starving, can we order first and then discuss everything proper

Me: yeah sure

She called up a waitress and she took our orders then went back to have them prepared. Mrs Mbira was hosting a 21st/graduation party for her daughter and she wanted me to capture everything for the day. We got to know each other little before the food came.

Her: so how much do you charge per hour?

Me: this is actually my first real job either than assignments and school stuff

Her: what? No way! Your portfolio is impressive!
You doing your 2nd year right?

Me: no first actually.

Her: wow. any seeing how good your work is,
work out a price and we'll take it from there. I
just want perfection for my daughter

Me: you can bet on Mrs Mbira

Her: call me Thembi please

Me: I can't. You old enough to be my mom Mah

Her: fine then Mrs Mbira it is

The waitress came to check on us

Her: will you be having anything else?

I shook my head

Me: no thanks I'm full

Her: we'll just have the bill thanks

The waitress nodded and then walked out. As
we were sitting talking with Mrs Mbira, Melo

walked in with his hand on this BEAUTIFUL (please note the word in capital letters because she was out of this world kind of beautiful!) lady's waist. They looked perfect I together, I was kind of jealous for a split second but I was also glad because then this meant he will get the idea of him banging me out of his head.

Her: Yandi?

Me: sorry. You were saying?

Her: I was saying we will discuss everything else over the phone ok?

Me: thank you Mrs Mbira. Thank you so much

Her: can I keep this? I want to show my daughter

Me: yeah you can keep it Mah.

Her: my daughter is going to love your stuff. Are you busy Friday? Because I would like to book you for the whole weekend

Me: I'm not busy

Her: great. Anyway it was a pleasure meeting you

Me: like wise. And thanks again

Her: thank your lecturer

And with that she got up and left. You know that feeling you get when you've achieved something great and you just want to shout or jump up and down but now you're in public and you don't want to look retarded? Well that was me. I wanted to scream and celebrate and go get drunk and high. As Mrs Mbira was walking put she and Melo greeted each other and then she left. Why am I not surprised they know each other? She's rich and he is Damon Bess's child. I bet you he and her daughter went to school together or something. I called Ledi on my way out but Derrick felt it best to leave the girl he was with to attend to me.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:22] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES
LOVE*

.

.

18-Melo

So Bonke is not such a saint after all?! I won't lie I was not expecting that, I mean we talk about almost everything, how could he not brag about screwing? His girl and I aint even friends for that matter. It's funny how these niggas always say I'm a dick when they going around doing far worse. I'm ass but even I would never cheat on my girl with her friend, that's just wrong in so many levels. I got up with a bit of a hangover did my morning routine and headed to the office. When I got there I called Yaya to wish her luck, I don't know why I called her cause we not friends or whatsoever. After the call I got a text from Kate asking me out for lunch and I

couldn't say no. she came to work to fetch me and we went to the restaurant down the road where we had met yesterday.

Me: you love this place huh?

Her: it's not that I love it but because you have to get back to work in an hour and stuff, I figured

Me: I see

We walked in just talking randomly. I let her walk in front and mahn this girl was on another level. Some Cassie type of ish if you know what I mean. We were stood there waiting for a waiter to get us a table, as we were waiting like that my eyes landed on the ever so beautiful Yandiswa Gxaba sitting across the room, she quickly looked away when she saw me look at her. The waiter finally got us a table and we went to sit down.

Her: I hope you don't mind but I did my research on you

Me: and what did you find?

Her: that you don't exist.

Me: what do you mean I don't exist.

Her: who are you?

Me: I told you, Derrick Ngesi

Her: you sure you not Derrick Bess?

Me: is this an interrogation or a lunch date?

Her: so this is a date?

Me: if you want it to be then I don't see why not

She chuckled. She was all kinds of beautiful this girl. I saw Mrs Mbira walk over to my table.

Her: Derrick hi

Me: hey Ma, how are you?

Her: I'm good. It's been ages

Me: I know right. Ma this is Kate, Kate this is my mother's friend Mrs Mbira

Kate: nice to meet you Mah

Her: like wise. Young Bess I expect to see you at my daughter's graduation party this Saturday

Me: wouldn't miss it for the world Ma

Her: remind your mom ok

Me: will do.

Her: bye baby, see you then

Me: bye Ma

With that she walked away.

Her: Young Bess?

Me: please don't

Her: why'd you lie about your surname?

Me: I didn't lie if you think about it, I just gave you half the truth

Her: right

Me: ok to make up for my lie, be my date to the 21st this Saturday

Her: what?

Me: please

Just then Yandiswa walked over, she was on the phone.

Me: excuse me

I said walking up to her. she dropped the call when she saw me stand in front of her

Me: thought you said you had an interview at lunch time

Her: its half past already and if memory serves me right lunch is at 12

Me: your point?

Her: my point is that I just got out of my meeting with the woman you were greeting a few minutes ago

Me: so you did see me but you were just going to pass me by just like that

Her: you with someone Melokuhle I didn't want to be rude or give her the wrong impression

Me: oh wow Yandiswa. Anyway did you get the job?

She smiled and nodded. I don't know what came over me but next thing I knew it I was hugging her and spinning her around in excitement. I quickly put her down and fixed myself and so did she

Me: congrats

Her: thanks Melo

There was a bit of awkward silence between us.

Her: uhhhm I should go. Naledi just got here

Me: when are we celebrating?

Her: join us tonight, 7 at Cubana

Me: see you there

Her: bye Melokuhle

Me: bye Yaya

With that she walked out and I returned to my table.

Kate: she's pretty

Me: yeah she is

Her: she your girlfriend?

Me: what? No!

Her: could have fooled me. The way you jumped when you saw her

Me: she's my sister's friend. Jealous?

Her: what? NO!

Me: could have fooled me

Her: well I'm not

Me: its ok to admit it Kate.

Her: admit what?

Me: that you like me

Her: after everything I've heard about you

Me: what happened to innocent until proven guilty

Her: no woman could ever change you

Me: and you got that based on what?

Her: I know people that know you Derrick Bess.
Biggest player in Durban

Me: one who is currently looking for a serious
relationship

She looked at me in shock. Honestly I was
shocked myself really. I mean where did that
come from?

Her: since when?

Me: since I met you. You're a cool lady Kate and
I would like to know you more on a more
personal level

Her: are you hitting on me?

Me: can we be serious just this once?!

Her: you caught me off guard Derrick. How do I
know I'm not going to be part of the statistics?

Me: because if I wanted you as part of the
statistics I wouldn't even be here right now.

Your clothes would be all over the floor in my apartment

Her: I.... uhhh...m....

Me: all I'm asking for is a chance Kate.

The last time I ever did this whole thing was back in high school with the girl that cheated on me with a friend of mine. I sucked at macking on girls, I don't even know why I was macking on Kate. Yandiswa is cool and all but now she is friends with my sister and my family likes her and all that which means it will never work out seeing that if I were to screw up they will take her side and gang up on me. Kate is a great chick, your typical idea of a wife material and all that and I think this is the kind of person who will be the one to teach me how to love and be in a relationship.

Her: I don't know what to say

Me: just say yes. Say you'll be with me

She nodded

Me: so???

Her: let's give it a try. But if you dare turn out to be what everyone says you are I will be gone young Bess

Me: as long as you'll teach me and be my guide in this whole relationship thing then fine by me. Just don't give up on me quick, I'm a bit rusty on this whole relationship thing and please never try to change me ok

Her: terms and conditions already

I chuckled

Me: I'm a law student. This is how we do things

Her: no doubt there

I laughed. We continued talking and just getting to know more and more about each other. She told me about her past relationship and things I needed to know and do in the relationship. Things she would tolerate and things she

wouldn't. seemingly relationships are complicated and they not all fun and games as I thought. They are a full time job. We spent 2 hours just getting to know each other. I was brought back to reality by a call from my father telling me about the shiit I needed to do back at the office, which meant I had to cut our nice time short and return to BESS. Kate was just a wonderful soul. The day ended eventually and it was time to go home. I bumped into aunt Siya on my way out.

Her: hey Kiddo

Me: come on aunty. Really now?

Her: you'll always be kiddo to me. So where were you during lunch? I came to check up on you and you weren't there?

Me: I was out with this girl

Her: tell me more

Me: nah fam we not doing that. You my best

friend's mom

Her: yeah so?

Me: no aunty Siya. Anyway when are you guys getting Siya a flat?

Her: he doesn't want one. His father and I have tried but nope

Me: why?

Her: he says he hasn't found the perfect one yet

Me: or he's just scared to live alone

She laughed

Her: maybe that. You never know with that one

Me: well there's an apartment available in that complex Mahle and I live in

Her: you should tell him about it.

I opened her car door for her.

Her: thank you

Me: you welcome. I'll tell him about it

Her: is your mom home?

Me: I don't know. she has a tendency of coming back late now that dad isn't around

Her: she's probably catching up on work. It's the only thing that probably distracts her from missing him too much

Me: right...

Her: hey I will hit you. Your mom loves your father

Me: I didn't say anything!

Her: your eyes Derrick

Me: by aunty

Her: bye honey

I closed her door and then went to my car and drove home. No-one was in the kitchen but you could hear noise coming from the lounge. I followed the noise and saw a face I haven't seen in a while. Aunty Jen was back and so was

dad.

Me: hello's

Jen: look who's here and more handsome than ever

She said getting up.

Her: come give me a hug

I walked over to hug her.

Me: why didn't you say you tell me you were coming back?

Her: then it wouldn't be a surprise.

Me: right.

I went to greet dad and then sat down and joined in on the conversation.

Mom: will you ever settle down?

Jen: no ways buddy. But I am seeing this guy

Dad: Jen and guys. Asemahle my baby please don't turn out like this one

Ase: but she's so cool and care free. Untied and all

Jen: exactly. Marriage aint for everybody

Mom: Jennifer O'Connor you will never change

Jen: I see no reason too. When was the last time you ever saw Jonas?

Dad: last week I think... why? You still interested in him?

Jen: nope but he's still interested in me. He's been asking me to go out with him for drinks when I got back

Mom: let me guess. You not going?

Jen: nope. No ways. Anyway Melo, any girl I need to know about?

I smiled

Mom: you have a girlfriend?

Ase: anyone but my twin. He is incapable of feelings

Jen: yeah but look at him blushing. There is a girl

Me: if you guys must know. its new, as in straight out of the box kind of new. I met her yesterday

Ase: and already you guys are dating. What if she's a psycho?

Me: I grew up with Aunt Jen as my aunt. I think I handle psycho's

Everyone couldn't hold back the laughter. Jen threw a pillow at me.

Her: shut up!

Iya: what about Yandiswa?

Dad: who's Yandiswa?

Me: Asemahle's friend

Iya: and your son's crush.

Me: what? No. Yandiswa is Melody's friend meaning she's off limits

Ase: glad you know that. I taught you well

Dad: whatever. So when are we meeting this girlfriend of yours?

Me: never! You guys are too crazy, anyway mom this Saturday is Linda's party

Mom: oh right...

Me: yeah. I bumped into her mom and she said you better be there

Her: of cause I will. I'm the guest speaker

Ase: you lie!

Dad: that's nice. What's going on?

Mom: it's a 21st/graduation party honey

Dad: oh right the one you were talking about

Mom: yes that one.

Jen: do you even know what you going to say?

Mom: really Jennifer?!

Me: sorry to be rude but I have to get going. I

promised a friend something

Ase: what friend?

Dad: yeah what friend?

Me: you guys are so nosy. A friend got a job

Mom: nice one. Tell him we said congratz and welcome to the real world

Me: I will tell her. Ase want to come?

Ase: does she have a name?

Me: bye guys.

Ase: I do want to come. Mom please

Mom: nope

Me: I'll keep an eye on her I promise

Jen: let the kids go have fun. Its holidays for Christ sake. Nobody stopped you from going out!

Mom looked at us both.

Her: fine but if she dare

Me: I promise she won't do anything! Go change fast fast

Ase went up to her room to get dressed.

Mom: and you bring her back home after

Me: yes, ma'am

Jen: since when are you this uptight? Damon aren't you sexing her enough?

Me: kiddie ears

Jen: oh please. Dae, answers

Dad: Melody doesn't know when to stop

Jen: so? She's 20. At least she's not sleeping around like kids her age. The stricter you are on them will be the death of you! Let her have as much fun as your parents let you when you were her age

Mom: really Jennifer?

Jen: yes, really. Nobody grounded you. Nobody told you not to go out, it was all your decisions

to make. Don't try turn her into you because she's not. Be the parent Bomi was to you

Just then Ase walked in all dressed up, skinny jeans, white vest, white sneakers and leather jacket in her arm.

Her: ready

Me: bye guys

Jen: enjoy yourselves ok

With that we walked out to the car. On the way to my place she was busy asking me who the mysterious friend is and who my girlfriend is and whether she was going to be there too. I didn't answer any of her questions. We got to my place and I took a quick shower and changed into jeans a t-shirt with sneakers and then we headed out to Cubana.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:22] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

19

I don't understand why Melokuhle would do that to me during the people and in front of his lunch date. I mean what's the girl going to think shame? But he did kind of make me feel special for that moment, almost like he felt something for me. I won't lie I enjoyed the moment such that I walked out smiling and got inside Ledi's car.

Her: I take it you got the job

I smiled and nodded.

Her: so when and where are we going to celebrate?

Me: 7 Cubana

Her: going big aren't we now...

Me: why not? Anyway I just bumped into Melokuhle and he was excited and he picked me up and spun me around

Her: I knew that big smile wasn't only because of the job

Me: what?

Her: you like this guy

Me: No! he was just being a friend

Her: yeah you do

Me: he was with this breath-taking girl. I mean out of this world beautiful friend

Her: and you think you can't take him from her?

Me: what?

Her: besides, isn't this the same guy who doesn't do relationships? I mean if this is Melo then surely he probably wants one thing from the girl... why would he be busy picking you up

in the presence of his girlfriend? What's he going to gain from that?

Naledi kind of made sense. If that girl was his girlfriend, then he wouldn't have done what he did. But then again he is Melokuhle Bess, he does what he wants and not care about anybody in the process, well maybe he cares about me I don't know about the rest.

Me: argh whatever friend, I don't care what he is doing with her. I just want to get high tonight.

Her: ecstasy?

Me: NEVER!

Her: just this once friend

Me: no Naledi!

Her: fine. Weed it is, I doubt its allowed at Cubana though

Me: so where do you suggest we smoke it?

Her: smoke at home and go get wasted at Cu

Me: great. Lemme call some friends

Her: just a few close friends!

Me: yes, mommy.

With that I sent a broadcast to Siya, Athi, Sihle and Melo. They all responded and said they would be there. We got home and Nita wasn't around the house or let me say we didn't see her anywhere from the lounge all the way to the back, nobody checked her room; not that we didn't care but we feel like she's an ungrateful bitch! We went to shower in our separate rooms and then went to chill in the lounge watching tv and mostly talking about stuff. A while later we heard some talking coming from the passage and a while later we saw Nita with Bonke, the guy was limping. Seemingly Ledi got him good.

Him: ladies

None of us responded. We just looked at them and back at the tv.

Him: Naledi aren't you going to apologise?

Her: I would except I wouldn't mean it so I rather not... you understand right?

Him: you really are evil huh?!

Her: I thought you would still be in hospital or with your side chick... I can't keep up really

Him: you may have caught me off guard but best believe that it was your first and last

Her: Anita control your man. Oh wait, he doesn't count as a man anymore... seeing that he's infertile now and shit

Him: Naledi I'm warning you!

Nita: you know how she is. Let it go

Me: you know what Anita... actually never mind. Have fun

Nita looked at me and shook her head before helping her boyfriend up the stairs. It was actually a funny sight such that we didn't even

wait for them to disappear before laughing at the two. We cracked up some jokes about what just happened and then a while later as we were still watching what was on the doorbell rang. We were hesitant to answer so we went all “rock-paper-scissors” on each other and she beat me to it so I went to get the door. Before me stood Emelie.

Her: hey friend

Me: Anita is in her room

I said walking out. I’m not scared to voice out my feelings but Anita made it pretty clear that it was none of our business and that it would be best we didn’t get involved in her business. Em followed after me.

Her: Yandi please let me explain

Me: you owe me nothing. Explain to Anita

Ledi: who is it?

Just as I was about to respond Em rocked up

behind me

Ledi: what? Are you guys having a threesome?

I hit her

Her: what? I just wanna know that's all...

Em: hello to you too Ledi

Her: mh... Anita and your boyfriend or fuckbuddy or whatever are upstairs in Nita's room... I don't think you'll be getting any tonight

I couldn't hold back my laugh. This girl was sick I swear. I don't even understand how she and I are still friends when she's like this. She is CRAZY!

Em: No. I just came to see Anita

We just kept quiet and focused on the tv we were watching before she interrupted. She went up the stairs to Nita's room.

Ledi: I'm kind of curious as to what's going to happen up there

I laughed

Me: dude No!

Her: I just wanna have it on camera that's all

Me: Ledi No! let's go get dressed anyway!

Her: but I want drama

She pretended to cry and I just laughed at her. I don't like drama, entertaining as it is but I'm not a fan of it. I think I had enough of it when I was with Zuko so now I'm just a chilled person. We went upstairs to her room and smoked 2 joints then we got dressed and hit the streets of Durban. Dare I say we looked hot and I was ready to get wasted. We got to Cu and the guys were already there except Melo and Ase.

Sihle: congratz my honey

He said spinning me around. He put me down and kissed my forehead and went on and on about how happy he was for me and how proud he was. I was so high it's not even funny. I

wasn't even in the mood for booze, I just wanted to dance and be happy. All the guys congratulated me and were happy for me. Siya bought a round of shots and we all had to take one whether we wanted to or not. Life was just perfect. I went to the dance floor to dance and this guy joined me and danced with me, I don't even know who the guy was, I was just there to enjoy myself. I saw Melo and Ase approach our table and I went back to the table to greet them. Ase congratulated me.

Her: are you drunk?

I shook my head.

Me: just high

Ase: where's more?

Me: in the car. Just ask Ledi

Melo: you not smoking weed

Me: weed is harmless Melokuhle

Him: I've been telling you to stop calling me that!

Me: or what?

Him: don't test me Yaya

Me: you need to live a little.

I pulled his hand through the crowd

Him: where are you taking me?

Me: to the dance floor. You look like you can dance

Him: yeah well I don't

Me: stop being an uptight ass just this once.

I started dancing and he danced along. We made magic, I was high yes but damn we danced so perfectly together, I felt like I was in some music video. It was my first time seeing Melo let loose and just be, I was proud of myself for bringing that side out of him. After the song we went to the bar, he suggested we go grab drinks.

Him: I didn't know you could move like that?!

Me: I didn't know you had that in you. You was on fire

Him: we make fire sweetie.

As we were talking like that the guy I was dancing with earlier on walked over to us.

Guy: how about you come show me those dance moves outside?

Me: excuse me

Melo: excuse you?

Him: and who are you? She was with me before you came along white boy. Stick to your kind

Melo: don't test me please

Him: what you going to do about whitey

He said shoving Melo. I could see the anger in his eyes that shiit was about to go down.

Me: I don't know you and you don't know me so please just go.

Him: this bitch! All you Xhosa's are the same. I

also have money, I can buy you a drink to if that's what it takes to get you into bed

Melo threw a punch at the guy and he fell to the floor and then he got on top of the nigga. The highness was suddenly turned into soberness. I tried pulling Melo off the guy and by now all eyes were on us.

Me: Melokuhle Please!

I shouted and he stopped when he noticed the guy bleeding heavily. He got off him and walked away from me and I followed him to the male toilets

Him: you not supposed to be here

Me: yeah well you almost killed someone because of me

Him: I hate guys who insult Xhosa women and call them shiit they not. My mom is Xhosa

He was washing his hand. I took tissues, niggas coming in the toilet were giving me funny looks

but I didn't care. I helped him with his hand.

Him: relax would you. My hand is fine

Me: your knuckles are bruised bruh

Him: be careful Yaya, I might just think you care about me

Me: oh and we wouldn't want that now would we

Me: no we wouldn't. you not for me

Him: and you not for me

Me: perfect. Then we understand each other

Him: loud and clear

I wiped his hand and he winced a little

Me: I'm sorry

Him: it's okay.

I looked up and him and our eyes met. He put his uninjured hand behind my neck and pulled me in for a kiss. His lips were so cold from the

beer he had drank earlier on, they still had that taste. They were soft and just all things nice or maybe I was just high all over again. I broke the kiss and moved back.

Me: uhhhm I should go back to the rest

Him: yeah you should

With that I walked out and headed to the table and a few minutes later he joined us.

Siya: where did you guys disappear to? Did you guys see who was fighting?

Melo looked at his knuckles. Things were just awkward between us all of a sudden. I was suddenly in the mood to get drunk. The kiss was heavenly no doubt but it shouldn't have happened. It was a mistake!

Athi: don't tell me you were the one fighting

Ase: talk about keeping a low profile Jerk

Him: We should leave. Its late and I have to wake up

Ledi: its only past 8 dude! Stay a little

Him: I have work. Sorry

Ase: come on Derrick. Just 30 more minutes,
Yandi talk to him please

I could barely look at the guy. I drowned myself
in the bottle I was drinking, it was a bottle of
brutal fruit, it was one Ledi's... that's what she
drinks when she doesn't wanna be sloshed.

Him: 30 more minutes and that's it

Siya: so what happened? Why'd you hit the guy?

Ase: Yandi where were you?

We looked at each other.

Me: huh?

Melo: that guy made some stupid comment
about Xhosa women and I took offense

Ledi: I hope you killed him. He doesn't deserve
to walk on this

The others laughed

Melo: yeah it's over now.

Ase: if your parents dare find out about this

Melo: they won't. Relax

We kept exchanging glances at each other. There was just a lot of awkwardness between him and I. it was so bad that he walked out to with his phone to make a call or something. I was just ready to go home so I suggested that this be our last round for the night, I sounded like a party pooper but I didn't care. I just wanted to be away from Melokuhle Bess. We got outside and he was talking on the phone and you could tell by the call that he was talking to a girl. We passed him and went to the car, I waited with Mahle and she told me about this girl her brother has started seeing since today.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:22] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

20-Melo

The kiss was an honest mistake! It was a spare of the moment thing and it was never meant to happen in the first place. I have a girlfriend and she would not be happy if she found out about this and that's the last thing I need right now. My first real relationship in a long time and I go on and screw it up! Just great! The kiss was amazing I won't lie but it happened at the wrong time! Had it happened earlier maybe I wouldn't feel so bad about it and I'd actually pursue Yaya but now I'm with someone and I need to prove to her that I am in this 100%. The way things were awkward between Yaya and me at the table I just needed to get away from her and who better to get away to than to call my new

bae?! She didn't hesitate to pick up.

//Me: I was hoping you not one of those "I don't call/text him first" type of girls

Her: well hello to you too Dee

Me: hey babe, how are you?

Her: I'm good and how are you?

Me: I'm ok. I miss you

Her: you had lunch with me today

Me: it wasn't enough. I want to see you; I want to be with you

Her: too soon

Me: I didn't say I want to have sex with you chill lady

Her: so you don't wish to have sex with me?

Me: I would love to very much but I don't want to rush anything just yet. For now, I just want to be next to you and breath your air, watch you when you sleep and just be in your presence

Her: are you ok? Are you catching a fever or something?

Me: what? Fuck NO! why?

Her: you all lovey dovey and shiit

Me: ouch!

Her: I'm sorry. I actually miss your company in all honesty

Me: aren't you sleeping early today?

Her: aren't you cooking today?

Me: how about I come eat at your place? Wait....
Can you even cook?

Her: do I look like I can't cook?

Me: yeah actually. You look like you don't cook at all

She giggled, her laugh was the most cutest thing I've ever heard! I could listen to it all day every day! I saw my sister walking out with Yaya and the rest of the crew behind them. Yaya and

I exchanged glances, I could hear Kate over the phone but my main focus was on the girl walking with my sister going to my car. They stood outside and continued chatting about whatever.

Her: Dee you still there?

Me: I'm sorry, you were saying?

Her: I was saying, how about you come over and find out for yourself?

Me: is that an invitation to your place?

Her: maybe.... Maybe not

Me: I'll take that as a maybe. Text me your address and I'll be there in an hour

Her: I can't wait

Me: me too babe. Bye for now

Her: bye//

After dropping the call, I walked over to my sister and Yaya off which Yaya left Ase when

she saw me approach. I couldn't help but feel bad about the kiss and the conversation I just had. She seemed mad at me for lord knows what. I unlocked the doors and my sister got in her side and I went in mine. I started the car and drove off.

Her: what did you do?

Me: excuse me?

Her: don't play dumb with me. You think I didn't notice the tension between you and Yandiswa? What did you do Derrick?

Me: why you always got to assume I did something wrong?

Her: that's because you normally do something wrong. You are the cause of the tension Melokuhle!

Me: I did nothing but defend her from the asshole she was dancing with from earlier on

Her: seems like there's more to the story than

you letting on

Me: like?

Her: I saw you two walking out of the toilets.
What happened in there?

Me: nothing. she just nursed my hand that's all

Her: really now Melo?

Me: what do you want from me Asemahle?

Her: the truth that's all

Me: you want the truth? Yandiswa and I kissed!
There you have it!

My sister is persistent like her mother and
father and its super annoying!

Her: why would you kiss her? you have a
girlfriend!

Me: uhhm a kiss involves two parties Asemahle,
it happens when both parties want it to occur
ok? I kissed her and she kissed me back

Her: and it didn't occur to you that you have a

girlfriend and you might be leading Yandiswa on?

Me: it was a mistake and she and I both agreed it will never happen again

Her: do you have feelings for Yandiswa?

Me: excuse me?

Her: oh I'm sorry. Was I not loud enough? DO YOU HAVE FEELINGS FOR YANDISWA?

Me: I don't have to answer this

Her: Oh My God! You have feelings for her. you've had feelings for her for a while now but you needed the kiss to confirm it! why didn't I see this before?!

Me: I don't know what you talking about!

Her: why are you with Kate if you in love with another Derrick?

Me: this conversation is over!

Her: No! No its not Derrick.

Me: I DON'T HAVE FEELINGS FOR YANDISWA!

Can we please just drop it!

Her: Derrick why are you stringing Kate along?
What game are you playing at?

Me: I'm not playing any game!

Her: yes, you are. You with Kate because you hoping that she will help you get over Yandiswa

Me: I don't know how you came about your conclusion, but it's not true. I feel nothing for Yandiswa

Her: I hope so. For your sake and for Kate's!

With that she kept quiet and looked outside leaving me in deep thoughts. The kiss may have confirmed my feelings for Yandiswa but it doesn't change anything. I have a girlfriend and I can't hurt her like this. I've already promised her I would be a better man and that I would do right by her and that's exactly what I want to do. Be a good guy for her. the kiss was a mistake, yes it made me feel some type of way about

Yaya but it was a mistake and it will never happen again! We got to my home and I parked the car and accompanied my sister in, when we got in mom and Iya weren't home. Dad was sitting alone in the living room working as usual.

Me: where are the ladies?

Him: well Jennifer is in town which means they are out to paint the town red

Ase: mom too?

Him: yep, even your mom. How was whatever you kids went to?

Ase: well Yandiswa will be the photographer for the Mbira's graduation party

Dad: Yandiswa?

Me: Asemahle's friend, Dr Gxaba's daughter

Him: oh right, her...

Ase: yep. You missed her this Sunday, she was here for dinner

Him: this girl must have made an impression huh?

Ase: yeah she did, mom says she reminds her of herself

Him: I should meet this girl.

Ase: you'll meet her this Saturday daddy

Me: I should go

Him: where to? Aren't you sleeping over?

Me: sorry dad, not today I already made plans I cannot cancel

Him: she better be special for you to bail on your family

Me: trust me dad, she is

Him: fine. Be safe

Me: bye dad.

I said walking out leaving Mahle snuggling herself next to dad. That one was always a cry baby. I called Kate on my way out of the yard

and told her I was on my way. I got to her place and called her to come and open for me. Kate lived in a commune opposite DUT Ritson campus in a single room, perks of being smart I guess. We went in her room and it was neat and did not look like a student's room, well except the single bed that was in the corner.

Her: it's not much b...

She didn't even finish her sentence when I pinned her on the closed door and kissed her passionately, she responded all too well. We broke the kiss after some time. Yaya's kiss was magical and Kate's was normal, it felt like I was kissing one of those random chicks I bang.

Her: and what was that?

Me: I've had a crappy day

Her: hahaha want to talk about it?

Me: I rather not.

She took my hand and I flinched a bit.

Her: I'm sorry. Wait what happened to your hand?

Me: can we not talk about it please

Her: can we talk about it please? What happened?

Me: I don't know if I told you but my friend got a job today

Her: the one we met earlier?

Me: yes her. so she invited us out for some drinks to celebrate her getting the job and all

We were sitting on top of her bed and she was listening to me attentively. It was actually cute really, she kept nodding to confirm that I had all her attention.

Me: so we danced and then went to chill at the bar, this drunk guy walks up to her asking her for a dance in outside and being the guy I am I try defending her, the guy insults her and calls her a typical Xhosa who's after my money and stuff and he said a whole lot of bull which made

me hit him because he had no right to insult my friend like that and I took offense because my mother is Xhosa

Her: your friend is very lucky to have you as a friend. I mean to defend her like that. I'm proud of you for sticking up for the defenceless

Me: I'm a lawyer, it's what I do

Her: hahaha let's not get cocky Dee. So where is your friend? She safe?

Me: I'd like to think so, she went home with her roommate

Her: well call her and see if she got home safely

I looked at her hoping she would say she was joking or something along those lines but nope, she was serious. She gave me that look, you know the one that says 'do as I say' look? Yeah well I took out my phone and she got up and headed to her pots while I made the call and guess what? It rang and went to voicemail

meaning she was probably ignoring my calls so I left her a voicemail saying to call me when she got this or send me a text telling me she was home safe and then dropped the call. I got and went to hug her from behind, she was busy dishing up for us.

Me: this looks yummy

Her: it's as good as it looks. So what did your friend say?

Me: she's not answering so I left her a voicemail

Her: shouldn't you be worried? What if that guy followed her home or something? it's not safe out in these streets Dee

Me: then what do you propose I do babe?

Her: call her again or call her roommate just to be sure. The last thing you want is to wake up to a headline saying that she is missing or she was found dead in a ditch. Girls are not safe out there Dee

Me: where did I get you?

Her: from heaven. No go call

She said pecking me on the lips and then continued with what she was doing. I asked Athi for Naledi's number and then called her, she picked up after sometime.

//her: Hello?

Me: Naledi Hi, its Melokuhle

Her: hello Melo, to what do I owe the pleasure?

Me: just wanted to make sure you guys got home safe that's all

Her: you could have called Yaya for that

Me: I could have but her phone rings and goes to voicemail, I just wanted to make sure you guys were ok that's all

Her: we are more than ok. Thanks Melo

Me: ok then. Bye Naledi

Her: its Ledi. Bye Melo//

There's something scary about Naledi. Maybe it's what I heard she did to Bonke or something but there's just something that scares me about her, she's intimidating. After the call Kate came with our plates and we sat down and ate. Her food was as good as it looked you would swear she was trying to make an impression and she was winning because I was impressed. When we were done eating she and I washed the dishes and dried them then we went to chill on her bed and cuddled while talking about stuff. She was a sweet girl and I would be an idiot to break her heart. She fell asleep first and I watched her sleep, she was too cute for words. I got her inside the covers and took my clothes off then joined her in bed. We didn't do anything but sleep and I was ok with that, it was unusual for me but I made do.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:22] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

21

So Melokuhle is dating the girl I saw him with today? I knew it! why would he kiss me knowing that he's seeing someone? The kiss changes everything. I was sort of mad at him but I mostly mad at myself for being that stupid. Why did I kiss him back? What was I hoping to gain from it anyway? He called me when Ledi and I got home but I straight of ignored his calls, what did he want from me maybe? Ledi walked in a while later and threw herself on my bed.

Her: I just got a call from Melo

Me: where did he get your number?

Her: I didn't ask... anyway he was calling to

make sure we home safe

Me: that's nice of him.

I said walking to my closet taking my clothes off layer by layer. She followed me.

Her: what happened tonight?

Me: what do you mean?

Her: I'm not stupid. I noticed the tension between you guys after the whole fight incident

Me: I don't know what you talking about Naledi

Her: when you and Melo left the table ya'll were on good speaking terms and then suddenly you come back acting all awkward... what happened? Did he hurt you?

Me: what? NO!

Her: then why are you ignoring his calls

She asked waving my phone in my face. She knows my pattern... just great! Naledi is one observant person so its best I just tell her

because one way or the other she's gonna find out.

Me: he kissed me in the toilet and I kissed him back

She screamed and started jumping up and down all excited.

Her: so this means that he is not dating the girl you saw him with and that you two actually might be something

Me: no! it was just a kiss. Besides, he has a girlfriend and we agreed that it was a mistake and it will never happen again

Her: WHAT???

Me: what?

I said walking back to my room wearing my pjays.

Her: you guys kissed. How was it?

Me: it was normal. It was a kiss there's nothing

to it really

Her: liar! You like him friend

Me: even if I do, it doesn't matter now. He has a girlfriend

I won't lie I really was hurt to hear that he has a girlfriend. I mean weren't we hitting it off? Aint like I was playing hard to get or anything but seeing those sides of him I never saw earlier on were slowly making me fall for him. Am I crazy for falling for the guy? Why now anyway? I think I need a destruction in my life.

Her: Melo kissed you knowing very well he has a girlfriend. Why do I get the feeling that he's with this girl for the sake of being with someone or because you've pointed it out to him so many times that you weren't interested in him that he decided to stop chasing?

Me: but Ledi I wasn't playing hard to get. I honestly wasn't interested in the guy before until he apologised and started showing me

sides of him I never knew existed

Her: what you do from here on is all on you baby girl. you can either tell him how you feel about him or keep it to yourself but I must say this, nothing eats you up like the words you never said...

We were now sitting on top of my bed with my head on her lap and her playing with my hair.

Me: I hear you...

Her: so honestly... how was the kiss?

Me: it was magical bruh! I wished it would never stop. I mean if his kiss is that good

Her: then his sex must be even better

I laughed. Like Naledi had to take it there you guys? Why was this girl like this? One minute we having a heart to heart moment and the next she's being like this?

Me: yeah well I guess I'll never know now...

Her: if you wanted to know you would know!

Me: yeah whatever.

I said getting under the covers and she joined me. My phone rang and Zuko was calling, well his contact was saved as "asshole". I cut his call but nigga didn't give up such that I even switched my phone off. There was a knock on my door, Ledi and I looked at each other before answering for the person to come in. Anita walked in looking like a mess.

Ledi: can we help you?

Nita: can I come in?

Me: you already in so might as well...

Her: guys I'm sorry

I just nodded.

Ledi: sorry for what exactly? Can you be a bit more specific

Her: I screwed up you guys and I know that now.

Bonke is not who I thought he was

Ledi: what did he do now?

Her: Emelie is pregnant!

Ledi: tell her we said congratz

I nudged Ledi under the blankets

Ledi: what?

Me: No!

Ledi: NO Yandiswa! Anita here gave me grief for sticking my nose in her business and now she's suddenly come to cry on whose shoulder? Nah fam it doesn't work like that! Anita sweetie go back to your limping boyfriend because you love him more than your friends who would do anything for you

Me: NO Naledi. Nita come sit down baby.

She was in tears and I just couldn't help but feel sorry for her, she didn't deserve this! Men really are trash shame! Who sleeps with your friend

and then goes on and makes them pregnant? Bonke deserved what Ledi did to his lying cheating ass! I got out of the covers and went to comfort her, Ledi wasn't fazed at all by her tears this time around. I didn't know what to say to her really because let's be realistic, you can't give advice in a situation you've never been before because what experience are you speaking upon really? All I could tell her was that everything was going to be ok, that's all I could even utter to her. one thing you must know is that she values friendship more than relationships so when you go on and choose a man over friendship you'll be on your own should that man hurt you especially if she had tried to help you and you threw her help back on her face. Ledi got up out of my covers and walked out of my room. Nita fell asleep first and I tucked her in then switched my phone on before calling it a night, the following morning I was woken up by a phone call from Melokuhle.

//Me: what?

Him: is that how we answer the phone now?

Me: when you kiss me knowing well enough you have a girlfriend, yes that's exactly how the phone is answered

Him: I don't understand why you mad at me because you kissed me back, you wanted the kiss as much as I wanted it

Me: had I known you had a girlfriend then trust me it would have never happened in the first place Melokuhle

Him: I called you because you didn't get back to my calls and texts Yandiswa

Me: yeah well Ledi told you we arrived home safely. What more do you want?

Him: to apologise. I should have never kissed you Yaya, I don't regret kissing you thou but I shouldn't have and for that I'm sorry

Me: ok. Bye Melokuhle

Him: Yaya wait. Please.

I kept quiet. This conversation was going terribly and I just wanted it to end already!

Him: you still there?

Me: yes

Him: thank you. I don't know why I kissed you honestly but I don't regret kissing you because it made me realise that I have feelings for you
I chuckled.

Him: I know you don't believe me and I'm ok with that but I just thought you should know that. As much as I would like to be with you but I can't, you my sister's friend and my family likes you and I would never forgive myself if I hurt you in anyway like I've done with Kate.

Me: It was just a kiss Melokuhle, it didn't mean anything

Him: can you honestly look me in the eye and tell me you didn't feel anything?

Me: it doesn't matter what I felt Melokuhle, I was high and what's done is done

Him: oh

Me: can I go back to sleep now?

Him: bye Yandiswa! //

I looked at my screen and the call had been ended... I don't understand why Melokuhle would call me at past 6 to tell me all of this. his call was unnecessary really. I mean what did he think would happen? We kiss and suddenly I'm in love with him and I want a relationship with him? It doesn't go that way! I tried sleeping but I couldn't sleep anymore so I went to Ledi's room and knocked but she didn't respond which meant she was probably still sleeping. I tried opening the door and it wasn't locked so I walked in and she really was sleeping. I got under the covers behind her and cuddled her, I needed a hug.

Her: it's still early. What are you doing up?

She said in a sleepy tired voice without even turning to look at me.

Me: I need a hug.

She turned and faced me then wrapped her arms around me.

Her: what's wrong? What happened?

She could barely open her eyes but she opened them and looked at me.

Me: I just got a call from Melokuhle

Her: saying?

Me: says he has feelings for me... he doesn't regret kissing me oh and that he can't date me because I'm close to his family and that he would never be able to forgive himself if he hurt me the way he hurt his current girlfriend

Ledi was smiling hearing all of this and really? I don't see exciting about all of this because it's not exciting at all!

Her: I don't know what more you want. That man is yours, you just need to take him

Me: I can't. He is not mine to take Ledi. He has a girlfriend, the last thing I want is to be those girls that wreck relationships

Her: why do we always blame the girl when it's the man that approaches the girl knowing very well that he has a girlfriend? Melo met you first so in all honestly he was yours first before he was hers

I couldn't help but laugh at her logic. See why I love her? she is able to make me feel better.

Her: there's that laugh I love so much.

Me: So you and Anita?

Her: what about us?

Me: you know what I mean

Her: argh I'm not going to pretend that I'm okay with the way she handled things. She didn't want us to get involved and now that there's a

baby in the picture she suddenly wants us to be involved? Nah fam it don't work like that

Me: but she apologised

Her: her apology means nothing to me. Anita needs us only when it suits her. what kind of friend is that? Let her grow up the way she wants to grow up, let her handle her shiit the way she wants to handle it bheyps

Me: oh Ledi

Her: NO Yandiswa! Let's sleep I'm still sleepy

I tried convincing her but my friend wasn't hearing jack shiit such that I even gave up. We fell asleep and woke up to an English breakfast made by Nita, of cause Naledi didn't eat it she made herself cereal. Anyway I got a call from Mrs Mbira asking me to come to her house Friday and take some "squad goals" pictures of her daughter and some friends for the 21st on Saturday. I was going to make +-R5000 from all of this which was going into my savings for my

gallery. Yes my plan was to buy an open space when I'm in my final year and then handle everything proper during holidays. After breakfast I showered and went to town to buy film for my camera with Naledi and some printing paper and all that other stuff with money mom sent me.

Me: so I got a text with my father's number

Her: you went through with it?

Me: I told you I'm curious

Her: what if he is not what you hoping for

Me: I don't even know what I'm hoping for

Her: does your mom know you looking for the guy?

Me: of cause she doesn't

Her: which means it's a bad idea

Me: how is finding my father a bad idea?

Her: we are talking about a man who never

bothered to be in your life Yandiswa!

Me: can you just support me on this please

Her: I don't want you to get disappointed

Me: you'll get to say you told me so after the whole thing

We were walking around Pavilion mall in Westville. This chick bumped into me making me drop my paper bags and her school bag in the process

Ledi: watch where you going

Her: I'm so sorry

Me: yeah me too

We were picking up the things on the floor and then we looked at each other and then we headed separate ways. There was something about the girl, I don't know what it was about her but there was just something about her eyes almost like I've seen them somewhere.

Ledi: you ok?

Me: yeah I'm fine

Her: these snobs need to watch where they going

Me: it was a mistake friend

Her: still doesn't excuse what she did though

She was a student at Durban girls high, she looked like she was in grade 9 or 10. Ledi calls DGH kids snobs because of the English and pretty much the school. She pretty much hates the kids for no particular reason. We continued walking and headed to her car and drove back home. On the way we were singing along to Lemonade the album.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:22] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES

LOVE*

.

.

22-Melo (Edited and continued)

Was going to have breakfast with her mom so we woke up early and stuff and then I headed to my place to change quickly before heading to work, I was a bit late but dad didn't make a fuss out of it. during lunch I went to his office.

Me: Mr Bess

Him: hey son. What's up?

Me: have you eaten?

Him: your mom said she's on her way here...
want to grab lunch?

Me: nah... have fun with mom

Him: son. What's wrong? You can always talk to me

I went in and sat on the couch and he joined me.

I don't regret kissing Yandiswa but now I feel guilty because it feels like I'm stringing Kate along. I like Kate, she's a good girl and all but there's something about Yaya that keeps drawing me to her. I didn't want to call her this morning but I did anyway because I wanted to hear the sound of her voice. I think I'm confused as to who I really want to be with. I feel like if Yandiswa and I got into a relationship now, it just wouldn't work out because she and I don't seem ready to be with other in a way. Like I just don't know.

Him: Derrick?

He said waving his hand in front of my eyes.

Me: yes?

Him: what is it? what's bothering you?

Me: women dad!

Him: now there's something I never thought I would hear you say

He chuckled and so did I. I mean even I never thought I'd say this but look at me all stressed out and shiit.

Me: so there's this girl right, name is Yandiswa

Him: the one you and Melody were talking about last night?

Me: yes, her. Yandiswa and I met at her party last week Friday, it was her birthday. So I found her and Mel taking shots at the bar so I played overprotective brother, long story short I was rude to her. the following day which was Saturday I went to fetch Mel and I was still pretty much rude to her but damn dad she is flames! every time we meet we are always at each other's throats saying stuff to annoy the other you know. so Sunday after church I bumped into her at home she was looking all fine in a bikini and all that but that's not the point. Anyway mom sent us to fetch Ase's clothes at her place and for Yaya to go wear a

proper dress and so we spent that day together and I apologised. Dad it's as if I fall for her every time I see her and that's the last thing I want right now. I'm not ready for her just yet. But anyway she and I were cool with each other until last night. I kissed her which kind of complicated things because I've just started dating this sweet girl named Kate.

He looked at me and smiled. I don't know why this man was smiling because I am confused and I need fatherly advice!

Him: do you like Kate or you dating her for the sake of dating?

Me: I like her dad, she's sweet and she's pretty much everything. She's like the perfect girlfriend. And then there's Yandiswa who is just like mom, she's sweet and challenging and pretty much interesting to know

Him: you and Yandiswa kissed right?

Me: Kate and I kissed too but it was different. It

wasn't the same dad, the kiss with Yaya was magical and the one with Kate seemed like I was kissing some random girl. how is that possible?

Him: its love. This crazy little thing called is magical

Me: I don't know dad

Him: it's pretty clear that you in love with Yandiswa but you scared to allow yourself to be the man for her

Me: I'm confused

Him: when I met your mother I was dating this girl named Jade. She was sweet and all at first but then she slept with both my friends, Andrew and Jonas, I tried to put it behind me but you can never get over such. I had It all planned out, I was going to make Jade pay for what she's done but the more time I spent with Amahle the more I lost interest in making Jade pay, Amahle made me want to be a better man, a better

version of myself and that's what I became... a better version of myself. Where I'm going with this, one of these girls makes you want to be a better man, I don't know which one of the two it is but I know you know and you are willing to change for her. With that being said, I think you know who you want to be with but you're also scared because change is scary on its own, you're scared that she'll make you want to change without you even seeing it

I guess he was right.

Me: I guess you're right

Him: I suck at giving advice but I hope I made a little sense

Me: you made a lot of sense dad. Thanks

Him: do talk to your mom about this, she's much better at this parenting thing than I am

I couldn't hold back the laughter.

Him: what? It's true. She knows this parenting

thing way too well

Me: yes, dad. For the record... you the best dad a son can have. Watching you and mom together has taught me more than you know

Him: I'm glad to hear that son

Me: yeah

There was a knock, you could tell by the one knock and then an entrance that it was mom because only she knocks like that on dad's door. The lovely Mrs Bess walked in looking ever so beautiful and classy in her cream sleeveless knee length coat and a cream dress which hung on her body all too well and her hair tied back in a neat bun with her gold highlights at the tip showing, her red-bottom heels were nude pink matching her handbag.

Her: my two favourite men in the whole wide world

Dad: hey honey

Dad met her half way and kissed her chick and took the food out of her hand and then she walked over to hug me.

Me: hey mom

Her: how are you guys? Melo how was the celebration?

She said sitting down and we all sat down after.

Me: it went great mom

Mom opened the food and fixed it up for all three of us, apparently she had bought enough for me too, said she went to check me in my office and she couldn't find me.

Dad: Your son has women problems

Mom: I'm sorry did you say "women"? as in more than one?

Me: geez mom... really?

Her: no thing is you refer to your flings as girls or chicks so I'm kind of shocked to hear you say

“women”

Dad: hahaha come on Boobie don't be like that, this is actually serious. He might just be in love

Me: woah dad let's not get ahead of ourselves here.

Mom: can somebody feel me in already?!

I told her what's been going on from the very beginning till yesterday and the phone call this morning.

Mom: I don't understand the confusion because it's pretty clear that you're in love with Yandiswa. Don't give me that look. You are with this Kate girl for all the wrong reasons baby and you not being with Yandiswa is also for all the wrong reasons. Just because she's friends with the family doesn't mean we wouldn't like you guys to be a thing. I mean she's a great girl

Dad: but you and her share a clan name

Mom: yes, but sharing a clan name doesn't

always mean you related. It's just a clan name, we probably share an ancestor but that's as far as it goes babe. Plus, Melo is coloured and it's his mom that's black and not his father so he's safe to be with her

Me: hmMMM

Mom: you like Kate because you feel like she might just teach you all the things you want to know about being in a relationship but what about Yandiswa? Did it occur to you that she too might just be the right girl for you? Think about it Melo. I'm not trying to convince you here but it's pretty obvious what's going on here

Me: maybe you right

Dad: told you she was better at this parenting thing than I am

We all laughed

Mom: you'd think after 20 years you'd learnt a thing or two

Dad: I try ok

Me: he's actually the best dad there is shame...
he's trying

Mom: hahahahaha that's a good one. I'm proud
of you my love

She said kissing dad on the cheek. I watched as these two love birds be the best parents they can be to me. We continued chatting about stuff and relationships, they were telling me about the things they've had to go through before reaching this point they are at. My parents have been together for more than 20 years but the spark was still there, they weren't tired of each other at all, it was beautiful what they had going on and I wanted it myself. I craved for it.

Mom: well lunch was great but that company won't run itself

Dad: But Yana is there

Me: ok... I should give you guys your space

Mom hit me playfully on the shoulder.

Her: hey! Clean that mind up silly

Dad: yeah respect Derrick

I laughed at them and walked out to my office. Knowing my parents, they were probably going to have a steamy session. I got to my office and did what I got paid for, when the day ended I went to check on dad but his office was locked so I asked his PA and turns out he left with Mom earlier on. I drove over to Yandiswa's place, she and I needed to have a serious talk about pretty much everything. I got there and the door was opened by Anita.

Her: Derrick

Me: hey Nita. How are you?

Her: please come in

She said moving aside for me to get in.

Her: I'm ok and how are you?

Me: I'm good. Uhhm is Yaya around?

Her: yaya?

Me: Yandiswa

"Melo"

A soft unfamiliar voice said behind me. I turned to see who it was.

Me: Lathitha?

Her: what are you doing here?

Nita: he's here for Yandiswa. She's not here actually, she went to Pava with Naledi

Lathi: what do you want from Yandiswa?

Me: we kind of friends... Any idea when she'll be back?

I said asking Nita

Lathi: you can leave her a message with us

Nita: she's supposed to be back already; she

went to buy equipment for her cam... but you welcome to wait for her

Lathitha gave me a questioning look as if I did something wrong to her or something like that.

Me: uhm I'll see her tomorrow instead

Nita: you sure? She's probably on her way.
Lemme call her and ask her

Me: its ok. Just tell her I was here ok?

Nita: will do.

Me: bye guys

I said walking out

"Melo wait"

I turned and Lathitha was once again behind me... God must be kidding me right now. The last thing I want to do today is break two hearts and Lathitha is putting me in that position right now.

Me: yes, Lathitha

Her: what did I ever do to you?

Me: what are you talking about?

Her: you told me someone close to you cared about me and that you couldn't be with me and all that other BS. Were you talking about Yandiswa? Did she put you up to dumping me?

Me: dumping you? I think you need to be with someone in order to dump them...

Her: you know what I mean

Me: actually I don't...

Her: Melo you approached me first and you asked for my number and then suddenly you give me the cold shoulder... I don't understand

Me: like I said. I don't want to hurt you Lathitha

Her: how will you hurt me Derrick?

Me: when I took your number I had one plan in mind, fuck and then bounce because that's the kind of guy I am ok. I screw and leave. I don't do

serious relationships and you seem like a nice girl and I don't want to hurt you so it was best I just stay away from you

Her: NO! you wrong. You lying! Yandiswa put you to this. she wants you that's why. She's jealous of what you and I could have

Me: I'm not entertaining this. goodbye Lathitha
I said walking to my car and she came on to me and pinned me to it trying to kiss me.

"You really are something else you know that?!"

-Kill me now please! - Lathi broke the not so real kiss seeing that she was the one forcing it in the first place. Yandiswa walked away and went inside the house leaving me with Lathitha and Ledi.

Ledi: you've really done it this time.

She walked away and left me standing there with Lathitha who seemed pleased with what was going on before her.

Me: stay away from me!

I walked back inside the house and left Lathitha standing there and went to look for Yandiswa.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:22] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

23

He never listens! He just doesn't listen at all! I asked him to stay away from my friend but nope, he just has to get free pussy whenever he can! I don't understand him I swear and just this morning he was confessing his feelings and then he goes on and kisses my friend. How stupid does he think I am? Melokuhle is an

asshole and he shall forever be one. That's the only thing he's good at anyway. I stormed inside the house and went straight to my room. I could hear Nita call me along with Ledi but I didn't want to hear anything. I was so mad. I got in and closed the door, Ledi and Nita walked in right after.

Me: to actually think that he meant what he said this morning! I'm such an idiot!

Ledi: can you at least hear him out?

Nita: what's wrong? What happened?

Ledi: he kissed Lathitha. Yandi calm down

She said holding me by shoulders and brushing my arms.

Ledi: just breathe ok

I inhaled and then exhaled slowly. Just then Melokuhle barged in. I don't know why I was mad really because he is not mine and he will never be mine. I can never be with someone as

self-centred as him.

Him: Yaya please hear me out

Me: get out Melokuhle!

Him: Yandiswa I'm not going anywhere without talking to you

Me: Melokuhle just leave

Ledi: dude come back when she's less pissed... please

Him: Yandiswa please. You owe me this much

Me: excuse me? I owe you what? Melokuhle you confessed your feelings to me just this morning and then you turn around and kiss my friend in front of our house by the way and you have the nerve to tell me I owe you? Leave Melokuhle!

Him: I don't know why I thought I could be civil with you just this once. I don't know why I thought you and I could talk like adults for once. Just once! I don't know what I need to do for you to see that I'm not this asshole you think I

am.

Me: you are an asshole Melokuhle. That's all you know anyway

Him: I don't know what you expect of me. I try to be a good person for you because I love you Yandiswa!

Me: oh please. Throwing a word, you know nothing of around won't make me change how I feel about you Melokuhle. Continue being this self-centred asshole you are because that's all you know how to be anyway

Nita: Melo I think you should leave

Ledi: come on. Let's give her space Melo

Him: I didn't even kiss her Naledi. She came onto me

Ledi: you guys will talk when she's less pissed ok.

With that he gave up and walked out with Ledi. For the first time I actually heard a sincerity in

the sound of his voice and a bit of defeat too.
Nita pulled me in her arms and I stayed there
for the longest before letting go.

Nita: what if he is telling the truth?

We were sitting on top of the bed at the edge

Me: you and I both know he can never let a skirt
pass him by

Her: but Yandiswa he seemed sincere. You may
have not been looking at him but I was and that
guy really loves you and he is trying

Me: Nita please

“she’s right”

Naledi said walking in and closing the door
behind her

Ledi: he didn’t kiss her, she kissed him

Me: a kiss is a two-way street

Ledi: I know he has a terrible rep and all but he
didn’t kiss Lathitha back. She came onto him

and not the other way round Yandiswa. He's trying and he's doing it for you, don't push him away

I didn't want to hear anything from them. Ledi likes Melo for me and she would say anything to score points for him. I needed to be alone for a little. A while later there was a knock on the door

Ledi: come in

Lathitha walked in looking ever so innocent.

Lathi: friend are you ok?

Ledi: friend? Heh this girl.

Naledi stood up and went up to her

Ledi: a "friend" doesn't do what you did. A friend listens!

Lathi: I don't know what it is you think I did or what Melo told you but I didn't do anything. He came on to me

Ledi: we all know you wanted Melokuhle and when we tried stopping you, you wanted him more than ever

Lathi: why did you stop me huh? so that he can be with Yandiswa? Melo approached me first

Ledi: Good Lord I'm going to hit this child! If Melokuhle wanted to be with you, he would be here right now... with you but he doesn't want you Lathitha! Accept it and get over it

I had no fight in me. Especially where a man is involved!

Nita: guys come on. Let's be adults about this

Me: you can have him Lathitha. You want him so badly right? he's all yours now if you all don't mind I would like to be left alone!

Ledi: you heard her. get out and if you ever set foot here again... you don't want to know what will happen

Lathi: you don't scare me Naledi

Me: guys please just get out! All of you get out!

I said shouting and everyone walked out quietly without saying anything to the other. If Lathitha wants to believe in getting burnt first to know not to play with fire, then she can have at it. I'm done with her and with Melokuhle! I went to take that nice long warm bath and came out relaxed and stress free, after I got in under the covers and fell asleep almost instantly. I had this weird dream... well more like a wet dream. I was having mind blowing sex with Melokuhle... how convenient seeing that he and I exchanged a lot of words today so this dream was just unneeded. It was the last thing I needed in my life and at this moment. I woke up when I was about to cum. I woke up sweating profusely. What the hell was that about? I cannot be having sexual dreams about this guy! A knock came on my door.

Me: come in

Ledi walked in with a tray of food. My friend loved me shame, even after everything she was still nice and sweet to me.

Her: you need to eat Lady

Me: thank you

She sat on top of the bed.

Her: are you ok? You sweating

Me: I had a wet dream about Melokuhle

She looked at me and she started laughing like crazy.

Her: you what???

Me: it's not funny

Her: trust me it is. You guys decide to have make up sex in your dreams. How cool is that???

Me: you are going to get out of my room

Her: and here I was worried about my friend only to find out she's having sex in her dreams. How was it?

Me: it was a dream Naledi

Her: yeah so? How loud were you moaning? Did you orgasm? I'm curious

Me: it was mind-blowing my friend. I had multiple orgasms and I woke up when I was about to cum

Naledi started laughing at me again and I couldn't help but laugh myself. I mean it was crazy really seeing that a few hours we were arguing and then a while later I'm suddenly having wet dreams... it was super messed up

Her: he looks like he gives mind-blowing sex!

We both laughed and started eating.

Her: he didn't kiss her. She kissed him

Me: it doesn't matter anymore

Her: you prosecuting the guy for a crime he didn't even commit Yandiswa

Me: I know you mean well friend but I'm done

with Melokuhle Bess. He has a girlfriend and yet he goes around kissing other girls. How do I know he won't do me the way he does his current girlfriend huh?

Her: there's only one way to find out. Besides that, the beauty of love, you don't know what you getting yourself in and that's okay because when you come out, you come out a different person with much more experience than when you got in.

I couldn't argue with her. she was right. I'll never know what Melokuhle is capable of unless and only if it so happens that I give him a chance but at the same time it's a risk because of the kind of person he is and I don't think I want to be with someone like that.

.

.

>>Fast Forward to Friday

Melo has been trying to reach me but I've been ignoring him since. As for Lathitha and I... we are people who happen to go the same university and that's that. Today I received a text with my father's contact details from a Man named Trevor who apparently worked with him at this other company. I've been contemplating to call him because I don't know what to expect from the guy really. So I called the one person I can count on to give me the best advice. Mom... it rang for a while before it was answered.

//Her: My baby

Me: hey Ma, how are you?

Her: I'm good Nana and how are you?

Me: I'm good Ma... so I've been searching for my father

Her: oh?

Me: a friend of his sent me his number today

Her: have you called it?

Me: no. I wanted to talk to you first

Her: baby I can't tell you what to do. If you want to meet him then I'm okay with that but just be careful ok?

Me: I will Mah

Her: with everything that is going on lately please don't meet this guy alone, it could be a trap

Me: I will be go with Siya Mah

Her: oh okay that's better. Honey I have to get back to work, tell me how it goes ok?

Me: will do. Bye mom

Her: Bye baby. I love you//

After the call with mom I went to shower to prepare for today. When I was done washing I lotioned my body and then wore low cut blue jeans, all white airmax, white vest and a long cardigan then went to grab a fruit and headed to Mrs Mbira's house. It was beyond the word

beautiful! This woman had money for days by the looks of things. She showed me around and she introduced me to her daughter.

Linda: mom showed me your portfolio and it speaks volumes babe!

Me: thank you

Her: how old are you?

Me: I'm 18. Congratz on graduating

Her: thank you. Come with me

She led me to other places of the house and showed me where to take pictures and which rooms have the best lighting and pretty much everything else. People started coming in, apparently they were going to have a family dinner today and then tomorrow is the birthday. I went home around 3pm and I was super tired but the pay was worth it so I had no complaints. The next day I woke up super early and headed to her place again. I took dozens of pictures of

her and her family, she had hired a videographer too for her thingy. As I was busy walking around capturing every tom-dick-and harry I saw Melokuhle socialising with some people and sadly he saw me see him and he headed my way.

Him: Yandiswa

Me: Melokuhle not now

Him: when? I've been calling you but you don't answer my calls

Me: Melokuhle please not here and not now.

Him: why Yandiswa? Just tell when and I'll be there

Just then Linda came over to us.

Her: Derrick you came

They hugged and I decided to Vanish while they conversed and went inside the lounge. As I was busy capturing every moment I saw the girl I bumped into at the mall the other day. She

walked over to me.

Her: I'm really sorry about the other day

Me: its ok honey. Things happen

Her: so you the one who took the pictures here?

Me: hihi yes I did

Her: that's awesome. They are beautiful

Me: thank you. Are you in anyway related to Miss Party?

Her: she's my cousin actually

Me: wow.

Her: her mother is my father's younger sister

Just as we were talking I felt someone grab my arm. I turned and Melokuhle was behind me.

This guy doesn't give up huh?

Her: Melo

Him: hey little one. May I steal her for 5 minutes

Her: you can have her

She said leaving me with this guy. We were in the lounge and it was sort of empty

Him: now can we talk?

Me: what's there to talk about? Where's Kate anyway?

Him: socialising. Come with me

Me: NO!

Him: Yandiswa can you stop being stubborn just this once and come with me!

I looked around and then he pulled me into what looks like an office and he locked the door behind us.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

24-Melo

Yandiswa has been avoiding me since the Lathitha issue of which I feel like she was making a big deal out of nothing. I get what it looked like but it wasn't. Lathitha has been trying to contact me since the incident going on and on about how much she enjoyed the kiss off which it wasn't even close to being on. I've blocked her everywhere she can possibly reach but she doesn't know when to quit that and I'm really starting to get pissed by her childish acts. Kate has been good to me but my heart belonged to Yaya who just wasn't talking to me. Saturday I picked Kate up at her place and went to the Mbira residence where everything was on point, these people really go overboard... but then again who can blame them? The mom is a retired Radiographer and the dad is a successful business man with a string of companies. I needed to talk to Yandiswa, I can't

leave like this! I just can't! She looked at me with her beautiful not so big eyes.

Her: talk!

Me: Yandiswa I did not kiss Lathitha. She kissed me and I didn't respond

Her: it's doesn't matter anymore Melokuhle

Me: of cause it does, why else would you ignore me?

Her: Melokuhle I don't get paid to go back and forth with you over nothing. may I go do my job?

Me: I'll pay you whatever they paying you with interest if I have to just as long as we get to talk

Her: about what Melokuhle?

Me: I know you feel the same way I feel about you Yandiswa! Stop fighting this already

Her: you have a girlfriend Melokuhle!

Me: but I'm in love with you!

Her: you know nothing about love Melokuhle.

You wouldn't know it even if it slapped you in the face

I chuckled in disbelief. Was she seriously going to be like this?

Me: I didn't come here to argue with you.

Her: then don't. leave me the fuck alone
Melokuhle! Stay away from me!

Me: not in a million years Yandiswa! I know you felt the connection when we kissed, I know you have feelings for me as much as I have feelings for you and this little act won't get you anywhere. It will only bring both of us misery. I meant every word when I called you that morning. You are who I want to be with

Her: what about Kate?

Me: just say the word and I'll end things with her Yandiswa. Please just give me a chance to prove myself to you

She looked at me almost as if looking for a way

out of this situation. I can't believe that I'm actually begging someone to be in a relationship with me. What is happening to me? If this is what you people call love, then it is harder than I thought.

Her: Melokuhle Kate is here because of you, the last thing you want to do is to break up with her here and even so, how certain am I that you wouldn't do me the way you did her? how am I sure that you won't go behind my back and kiss someone else? How sure I am that you won't confess your feelings to someone else like you doing to Kate now?

Why does Yandiswa have to complicate things unnecessarily???

Me: that's the beauty of it. we both don't know what it is we getting ourselves into

Her: I'm sorry Melokuhle but I'm not ready to build my happiness on top of another girl's tears.

With that she headed to the door and walked out on me. I don't understand why she is being like this! she's so difficult. I walked out and went to find Kate and I found her socialising and people seemed to like her. I hugged her from behind and kissed her cheek.

Her: hey stranger. Where did you run off to?

Me: to answer a phone call baby. I'm ready to leave, are you?

Her: but the party hasn't even started

Me: we can make our own

I said grabbing her ass and she giggled

Her: we are in public Derrick. What if your parents saw that?

Me: let them see. So can we go?

Her: only if we'll come back later on

Me: really babe?!

I asked sarcastically. I needed to get away from

Yandiswa! I just needed to be away from her and Kate was making this difficult.

Her: yes. We here for your friend and she needs you here

Me: fine we'll come back then

We walked to my car hand in hand, I spotted Yandiswa and she just looked away. We got to my car and I drove straight to my place. I was so mad at her I needed sex to erase her out of my mind. We got to my apartment and I pinned Kate on the door and kissed her for dear life as my hand made its way down to her ass, she didn't fight me or whatsoever, she gave in like I wanted her to. Before I knew it we were both naked and I was pounding on her hard until she came, I took us to my bedroom and went at it again then pulled out. We were both on the floor trying to catch our breaths. I cuddled her... something I never do by the way.

Her: what was that about?

She said in between heavy breaths

Me: I had a crappy day

Her: talk to me

Me: its work babe don't worry it.

she looked up and kissed me then we stayed like that for a while.

Me: don't tell me you sleeping

Her: have you ever had sex with you?

I chuckled

Me: I wish I could say yes but nope... never did.
Come let's go wash

Her: 5 more minutes please

Me: you said we should go back lady so wake up

Her: fine!

We got up and went to shower, we had another steamy session before washing properly and

then went to get dressed in what we were wearing. We drove back to the 21st and the day went well, mom killed her speech and after that I took Kate home and I went to sleep at the Bess Mansion. The following day I woke up and showered then headed downstairs wearing shorts and a vest.

Me: morning Family

In the kitchen was Mom and my sisters.

Them: hello...

Me: where's dad?

Mom: still sleeping

Me: I wonder what you did to him

I said giving her a naughty smile and everyone laughed, she threw me with a swab and I caught it laughing

Mom: Melokuhle I will smack the daylights out of you

Yana: we not kids anymore mom. We know what you guys do behind those doors

Yana and I fist bumped laughing hard

Me: on some baby making tip so early in the morning mom

Mom: heh these kids! I am out of here

She said walking towards the stairs laughing. We were all in stiches of laughter. I had the best family EVER!

Ase: you and Yandiswa disappeared for a while yesterday...

Me: yeah so?

Iya: what's going on between you two?

Ase: they kissed that night we went to celebrate Yandiswa getting a job

Me: uyaphapha! (you so forward!)

Iya: how do I not know all this? why was I not told?

Me: because it will never happen again. I'm done with Yandiswa!

Ase and Iya looked at each other and back at me.

Iya: what did she do to you?

Me: I don't want to talk about it

I got myself a bottle of water from the fridge

Ase: is this about the kiss the other day?

Me: I said I don't want to talk about it Geeez!

I got stormed out. I took my keys on the key rack and drove to lord knows where. I needed to breathe. I don't understand why I'm like this when I had the best sex ever just yesterday.

Yandiswa needs to get out of my head. I found myself parked in front of my apartment. I took my keys and went up the stairs, I found Lathitha standing by the door...

Me: how did you know where I live?

Her: I have my ways. Are you going to let me in?

Me: what do you want?

Her: to apologise to you

Me: ok... apologise then

Her: aren't you going to let me in?

Me: Lathitha what exactly are you doing here?

She grabbed the key from my hand and opened my door. I had no argument in me so I let her be. She walked in and I walked in after her. She was wearing bum shorts and a crop top with a sandal. I never noticed how hot she looked until I saw her from behind and dare I say the view was immaculate! I closed the door and she pinned me on the door and kissed me, I responded this time around. This is what she wants mos plus Yandiswa is out of the picture so I might as well have at it. I led her to the room while kissing her and taking her clothes off while she took mine off. I threw her on the

bed and one thing led to another. When we were done I went to dispose of the condom and showered then went back to the room with a towel wrapped around my waist.

Her: that was AMAZING!

Me: yeah it was

Her: don't tell me you showered without me

Me: Lathitha I told you what kind of guy I am and I'm certain your friends did too

Her: but we just had sex!

Me: I know and that was it.... sex... I have a girlfriend

Her: is it Yandiswa?

Me: I'm done with your friend dude

Her: I thought you said you didn't do relationships?

Me: I know what I said but now I'm trying to turn over a new leaf

Her: you should have thought of “her” before you kissed me back Derrick

She got up and wore her things. I think she was mad and hurt too but I wasn't fazed really, I just wanted her gone. I went into my closet and wore my briefs and shorts then headed to the kitchen where my phone probably is. I searched and searched but couldn't find it. I went back to my room and I found it on the dresser, if how it got there I also don't know. Lathitha was dressed.

Her: Kate called

Me: you didn't answer it did you?

Her: does it matter if I did?

She said with some attitude and then walked out. Lathitha was really testing my patience I swear. I took my phone and checked my call logs and really Kate did call and the call was answered. I tried calling her but her phone would ring and go to voicemail, I kept calling

until it sent me straight to voicemail. I took out a t-shirt and wore it and wore shoes and headed out to my car and drove straight to her place. I got there and knocked but nothing. I called her but went straight to voicemail. I banged on the door until I heard the key turn. My heart started racing really fast because I didn't know what to expect from her. I was scared! She opened the door

Me: Baby I can ex...

Before I could even finish she slapped me

Me: Kate plea...

She slapped me again on

Her: I never want to see you again Derrick!

Me: what did Lathitha say to you?

Her: Derrick leave!

Me: Kate I'm not going anywhere until you talk to me

She tried closing the door but I stopped it with my foot.

Me: Kate Please. Whatever Lathitha told you, it's a lie!

Her: so you didn't sleep with her?

Me: NO! why would I sleep with her Kate. I love you

She walked inside and I followed behind her and she took her phone and paged through something and then she turned her phone to me.

Her: why would she be naked on your messed up bed Derrick if nothing happened?

-I am going to kill that bitch I swear! - She sent Kate a picture of her naked with my phone. I knew she was messed up but this, this is another level of madness!

Me: Kate I can explain

Her: you were never ready for a relationship

Derrick and you never will be. You and I are done! You got what you wanted right? please leave

Me: Kate Please

Her: GET OUT Derrick!

Me: Lathitha is crazy and she would do anything to get with me

Her: oh so you guys didn't have sex? This is not your room and those sheets behind her are not yours right?

Me: Kate come on

Her: let's go to your house Derrick and see

Me: fine! I slept with her and I'm sorry

Her: you are incapable of being in a serious relationship. I don't know why I thought I'd be the one to change you. It hasn't even been a week and already you've cheated on me?! I thought people were making up stories about you but your actually worse than the stories I've

heard. Leave Derrick and lose my number and anything and everything you could ever contact me on, I'll do the same!

She said opening the door for me and then she looked away. I hate that I hurt her, I hate myself and I hate Lathitha even more! My first relationship and I go on and screw it up... I really am what everyone says I am shame. I walked to my car and drove to my place. I needed to be alone and needed a drink.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

25

It was a Monday and I haven't heard from Melokuhle ever since and I must say I'm glad he's finally off my back. So I finally gathered up the courage to call my dad and asked to meet him and turns out the guy resides around Durban. I asked Siya to accompany me in case it's a scam or whatsoever... you can never be too safe nowadays with everything that's going on. We got to the Spur around 10am and I asked my friend to sit in the table behind us in case of any funny business. I spotted him, well I had seen his profile picture on WhatsApp so he wasn't that hard to notice really. I walked up to the table.

Me: Hi, I'm Yandiswa Gxaba

I said pulling out my hand to him and he stood up and responded

Him: Hi. I'm Thando Bashe

I must say, I actually saw what my mom saw in him, the guy was a looker shame plus he gave

me these beautiful eyes after all. I look like my mom yes, but there are those features from him.
We sat down

Me: Unjani? (how are you?)

Him: Fine and you?

Me: I'm good.

A waitress came to take our order but I wasn't up for eating so I asked for a glass of water and he ordered a meal then she left us.

Me: I don't know how these things are done so you'll forgive me

Him: what things?

Me: this whole thing. I'll get straight to the point. Uyamazi u-Babalwa Gxaba wase Mthatha? (Do you know Babalwa Gxaba from Mthatha?)

Him: uhhm... Yes I know her.

Me: I'm her daughter. . .

Him: Oh ok, right now I don't know what to say.

Me: Why is that?

Him: I don't know.

Me: Did you know you have a daughter that just turned 18 on the 15th this month

Him: Never thought about it really. too much happened then.

Me: early 1996 She fell pregnant with me. . .
Gave birth in November, you guys had a blast on Valentines I assume

Him: Yes I'm aware of that.

Me: Now what?

Him: Too much happened that I don't really want to get into.

Him: What do u mean now what?

Me: Nice to meet you by the way. . .

Me: I mean you know me now. . . You know about my existence. Now what?

Him: Ohh really? You just met me I might not be

what u hoping for in a father.

Me: What's that supposed to mean?

Him: Just a statement. As for your question, I just heard from you just now, you don't really expect an answer as to what now! Do you?

Me: Oh. . . So agree that I'm your daughter?

Him: Tshin, uyandi tester kanti? (so you testing me?)

Me: No I'm not. I just want to know that you acknowledge and accept me as your daughter. Am I wrong for wanting to know who my Father is?

This guy was slowly pissing me off. Just because I searched for him, doesn't mean I need him... I just wanted to know the kind of person he is and that's that.

Him: If you not sure if I'm your father then what makes you think that I am?

Him: And what does your mom say about all

this?

Me: She knows I'm meeting up with you

Him: I know we had something with Babes which never ended very well due to interference of our parents. But afterwards I don't know what happened.

Him: how do u know about me? Who sent you to me if she never sent you?

Me: Not to sound rude or anything like that but It's funny that you want answers from me yet you not willing to answer mine. My mom told me your name, surname and that you in the agriculture business. So no-one sent me to you. I was just curious as to who you are

Him: I always have problems when kids start not having respect for their elders. Anyway I'm bound to ask questions because this is a matter that I would expect your mother to handle.

Me: I'm sorry you feel disrespected

I said sarcastically. Surely he doesn't think I'll apologise for the way I speak to him if he's not willing to speak to me like the elder he is

Me: respect is a two-way street by the way, you give it in order to receive it... I'm just saying

Him: I need all the answers to the questions that I have, to get clarity before I can start talking.

Him: For me to do that, you have to answer my questions because I don't want to cause any bad vibes between you and your mom because of me.

Me: My mom and I are very close. But she's already dealing with too much baggage that I don't want to stress her out by bringing you up just yet.

Him: I'm listening.....

Him: Ok

Him: So this quest of looking for uThando, tell me more about it.

Me: My mom told me little about you a while back. Told me my dad's name is Thando Bashe and he's from Tabankulu. I didn't really look much into it back then; I guess I wasn't really into it as such cause my family made sure that I never feel fatherless. But the more I grew up I felt the need of wanting to know you. . . I guess being a teen got the best of me cause it's not right not knowing your 2nd family. So last year I started searching but never got anywhere and so I put it on hold to focus on rather much more important things such as my books and other personal family matters. This year I figured I should try again and so I found a link to you which is Mr Trevor's email and the rest is what it is now. You're a hard man to find Mr Bashe!

Him: Hehehe...

Him: And now how do u feel when you have

found Thando Bashe?

Me: Nothing wow about it really. . .

My water came along with his food. I was so annoyed by this man; it was as if I'm talking to someone who never contributed jack shiit in making me.

Him: Ohhh ok ke.

Me: How old are you? are you married? Do you have kids?

Him: Lots of them. Not married. 3 kids. Still looking for a job. To establish my own company in fact.

Me: Goodluck.

Him: Last year I tried working for company called Kohwa but it never worked out. I'm pursuing ministry as well. Got a calling.

I looked at him trying to hold back laughter. This guy claims to have a calling yet he is talking to his daughter like this? I don't know

which God he is hoping to serve but may the good lord be with him in his quest.

Me: Hope all goes well for you Mr Bashe

Me: So which one am i?

Him: you are 4 in total

I kept trying to picture this guy standing in front of a crowd and preaching about family but I couldn't get anything because that would be hypocritical of him in so many ways.

Me: Mom told me that when her family went to your home to report that you had made her pregnant, your family denied you having made her pregnant. Your family made my mom seem like some loose whore. Excuse the language

Him: like I said. This is not the conversation I should be having with you

Me: why?

Him: this is not the time nor place to be going down memory lane

Me: Why did you deny making my mother pregnant when you know very well that you did it?

Him: My father made me deny it. my parents were very strict and I would have lost everything had I said yes I did it

Me: ok. what happened when you weren't dependent on them anymore? Why did you try to contact my mom again after?

Him: look. I don't know what you are trying to gain out of all this

Me: I'm just a child looking for answers. I don't understand why a grown ass man who knew he has a child did not do anything to try and get contact with their child when they were able to. I mean You finished university and you were no longer dependent on your parents but still you didn't do anything to reach out to me

I was now pissed to the core. This man was being childish.

Him: like I said before. I don't respond well to disrespectful kids

Me: and I don't respond well to disrespectful adults.

He chuckled in disbelief.

Me: look, I didn't contact you because I want anything from you because honestly I am sorted in all levels of life. I just wanted to know the kind of man you are Mr Bashe and I can't say I'm impressed, I feel sorry for the people that will sit in your congregation and listen to what ever hypocrisy that you will be preaching. Sorry for wasting your time I'll never bother you again. Bye

.

I took my bag and walked out holding back tears. I was so pissed to that point. This man was making me something I'm not. I'm a very respectful person but he was making me something else. Siya ran behind me and he

opened the car and I got in and just cried. He got in his side and brushed my back.

Him: what happened in there?

I couldn't even talk, that's how mad I was.

Me: please just take me home

Him: Yandiswa please tell me what he did to you

Me: I don't know what I was thinking meeting him! My god I am so mad!

he brushed my back

Him: Yandi calm down. just breathe ok

I could feel my lungs closing up, I couldn't breathe, let alone talk. I think I was having a panic attack. Siya didn't ask any questions, he drove me straight to hospital and I was attended to. I don't know when I passed out but when I woke up I was in a hospital bed with Ledi, Nita, Sihle and Siya sitting next to me.

Ledi: thank god you're awake.

Sihle: you scared us!

Me: guys I'm fine

Nita: what happened?

Siya: doc says she had a panic attack

Ledi: what did that sperm donor say to you?

Me: I'll tell you all about it later on. For now, I want to go home

Siya: doc wants to keep you over night to make sure you ok

Me: I'm fine Siya. Thanks for everything my friend

Siya: what are friends for?!

I smiled faintly. I couldn't stop thinking about the conversation I had with the sperm donor, yes that's exactly what he is to me because a father would never talk to his daughter that way or maybe I watch way too much television. The

Doc came to check up on me and turns out I was ok so I asked him to go home but he refused, said he wants to make sure I don't have another episode. Later on my friends left and I was yet again stuck in my own thoughts. The meds were kicking in making me feel drowsy. I looked at the time and it was only after 12pm... how long was I out kanti? I decided to get on WhatsApp and answer people's texts. My phone rang and I answered it. it was mom.

//Her: thank goodness you ok.

Me: hey mom...

Her: Siya told me you had a panic attack

Me: I'm ok mom

Her: what did he say to you?

Me: nothing you didn't warn me about.

Apparently he has a calling and will probably pursue ministry

She laughed at how sarcastic I was

Her: now that's a service I would like to attend

Me: I know right

Her: but are you ok?

Me: I'll be fine mom. I'm at peace knowing the kind of person he is. He may have not said it in many words that he doesn't want me but I never needed him in the first place. My life is better off

Her: oh baby. I'm sorry

Me: its ok mom. Really it is. Heh, he was ouchea going on and on about how he's supposed to be having the conversation with you and not me. Says he has a problem with disrespectful kids

Her: imagine! Doesn't he know that respect is a two-way street, you give to receive it

Me: that's exactly what I said to him

I heard the door open, I looked up and was met

by Melokuhle Bess... -what is he doing here? -

Me: mom... I have to go

Her: ok baby. I'll check up on you later

Me: can you call this hospital and tell them to discharge me already

She laughed

Her: it's just one-night baby. You won't die

I don't like hospitals. There's just something creepy about them as a whole. They make my blood race.

Me: bye mom

Her: bye baby. I love you

Me: I love you too//

He walked over to my bed... -God help me! -

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

26-Melo

Even with a terrible hangover life needed to go on. I got to work on some "Don't fuck with me" tip. I buried myself in a pile of unclosed cases until it was lunch time, well until Asemahle walked in all hippy with lunch. I was in no mood for her and her lectures really but I had no choice really.

Her: Hey twinny

Me: if you here to give me a lecture, save it

Her: what's wrong with you? I just brought you lunch that's all

She said clearing my table and moving some files out of the way to put our food on the table.

Me: I'm sorry

Her: rough night?

Me: you have no idea

Her: what happened?

She handed me my take away and a fork and she took hers

Me: Kate broke up with me...

Her: what? Why?

Me: Lathitha happened

Her: who's Lathitha?

Me: a mistake. We had sex and she sent nude pictures to Kate. Like what the fuck?

Her: you kidding me right?!

Me: I wish. Please don't lecture me

Her: I have no intentions to. Its men like you that remind me why I'm better off single and a virgin

Me: better stay like that.

Her: anyway. Our birthday is back on

Me: great

Her: I need a list of people you want to invite

Me: you know all my people

I shrugged. I was really not in the mood to be discussing this but my sister was trying to cheer me up and the least I could do was to participate

Her: yes but I was hoping that you had new names to add to the list... like Kate or Yaya

Me: I don't want any of them there

Her: sadly, Yaya is my friend and she will mos def be there for the whole weekend by the way

Me: seriously Melody

I said rolling my eyes. Well nothing I do or say was going to change her mind. Yandiswa was coming either way and it didn't matter what I

said.

Her: yes.

We continued eating lunch and chatting about my flops of this past weekend, she was laughing at me, which wasn't helping with the situation at all but hey you not black if you don't laugh during such situations right? I walked her out and I was in a much lighter mood. When I got to my office my phone had just stopped ringing, it rang again and I answered it. it was Siya.

//Me: Hello

Him: you busy?

Me: not really. Why?

Him: Yandiswa is in hospital

My mind kind of went blank for a second. What did he mean Yandiswa was in Hospital?

Him: Melo are you still there?

Me: uhhhm... yeah

Him: did you hear me?

Me: yeah. Which hospital?

Him: the one your aunt used to work in.

Me: what happened to her?

Him: she had a panic attack

Me: what caused it?

Him: she met with her father today and things went south. Just go see her when you can ok. if there was ever a time Yandiswa needed you Melo, it would be now. Stop playing games and just be there for her truly

Me: sure

Him: I'm serious Melo. Yandiswa is not one of your floozies and if you really want to get with her you will have to do things by the book! No shortcuts, no games or whatsoever

Me: I hear you

Him: bye//

Siya's call left me speechless. I mean why the lecture? The last thing I'd ever do is hurt Yandiswa purposefully. I'm human and imperfect, I make mistakes but I am able to admit to my mistakes and try to fix them.

Hearing that Yaya was in hospital was the worst and hearing that her father was the reason she was in there was just something else. I don't know the guy but he was going to get what is meant for him and that's a promise. I took my wallet, phone and car keys then headed out. On the way out I bumped into the big boss himself.

Him: son

Me: dad

Him: I was just on my way to see you. Where are you going?

Me: Yandiswa is in hospital and I have to go see her

Him: no son you can't. At least not now, I need you to attend a meeting for me in Chester

Me: no dad Yaya needs me

Him: I know you like this girl and all but son I need you. You can go to her after. I wouldn't ask you to if it wasn't important

Me: fine.

Him: thanks. Check your mail I sent you an email briefing you about the meeting you going to

Me: sure

Him: I will make it up to you son and that's a promise

I didn't respond to him. I walked out reading the email he had sent me. I was kind of mad to be honest because this was just not fair. I went to Chester and the meeting took longer than expected and when it was finally over I drove to the hospital. When I walked in her room she

was on the phone with her mother. I didn't know whether to walk in any further seeing that the last time we spoke things didn't go as planned. I was hella nervous too and I didn't know what to expect from her. she seemed surprised to see me, so Siya didn't tell her I was coming? I walked up to her side of the bed

Her: Melokuhle what are you doing here?

Me: Siya called me...

Her: of cause he did. I'm fine. You can leave

Me: I'm not going anywhere Yandiswa

She looked at me almost shocked.

Me: he told me you had a panic attack

Her: of cause he did.

Me: can we please behave like adults just this once?! What happened? What did he do to you?

Her: nothing

I sat down

Me: you can either talk to me and tell me what happened or I can sit here all day till visiting hours are over and even so, I have the power to stay even longer

Her: oh right... your family owns a share of the hospital

She said rolling her eyes. She was still as beautiful even in a hospital bed.

Me: what happened?

Her: I had a panic attack...

Me: I know that much. What did he say to you?

Her: nothing new

Me: Yandiswa please

Her: What are you doing here Melokuhle? And don't tell me Siya called you, you had a choice to either come here or not. Where's Kate?

Me: I'm here because I care about you Yandiswa. I'm here because I was worried

about you and I am sick and tired of playing games with you. We both know how we feel about each other but here we are playing games and trying very hard to deny what we both feel for the other and to me that's just childish and won't get us anywhere.

Her: Where is Kate?

Me: if you must know, it's over between us. She called it quits after Lathitha sent her a picture of herself naked in my room

Her: so you slept with her even after I asked you not to?

Me: what was I to do Yandiswa? You pushed me to her when you flatly rejected me

Her: so what? You thought sleeping with her was going to what? Make me want you? He....

I cut her off by kissing her, she fought me at first but she gave in. This kiss was different

from the one we had the other day. It was like we were speaking all the things we wanted to say to each other but didn't say. I got on top of her and the kiss got really intense, I could feel my shaft go hard. I broke the kiss and looked deep into her eyes. She looked at me and smiled biting her lower lip in a very sexy way.

Her: uhhhm....

I chuckled. And she moved aside and let me in next to her, we cuddled.

Her: so...

Me: so.....

Her: you and Lathitha

Me: don't start

She laughed and I tickled her making her laugh even harder

Her: ok ok I'm sorry

She said in between laughs... she tried to catch

her breath and she finally did. I was happy to be in this moment with her. we were in a world of our own for the first time in whatever time. We were both happy and in the moment.

Her: I have to ask

Me: please don't ruin this

Her: I have to... I'm curious

Me: if we talk about this then we never talk about it again

She held out her pinkie

Her: pinkie swear

We pinkie swore.

Me: I can't believe this.

Her: you want us to be a thing don't you?

Me: are you blackmailing me into a relationship?

I chuckled

Her: if it works, why not?

Me: heh

Her: hey stop ignoring me. I want to know everything that went down between you, Lathitha and Kate.

Me: well Kate and I disappeared for a little while Saturday and we had sex, it wasn't that wow really but I needed something to get my mind off of you. I slept at my home that day and Sunday morning my sisters annoyed me and when I got to my place I found Lathitha outside my doorstep... did you tell her where I live?

Her: NO! why would I?

I shrugged.

Me: anyway, she didn't want to leave and I was still mad at you and she was there so one thing led to another and we had sex. When we were done I pulled a Melo on her but she wasn't about to have that so turns out Kate had called

and she answered my phone...

Her: She did what? You really pissed her off huh?

Me: I guess I did. Any who she gave me my phone and I checked my call logs only to find out she had answered Kate's call and as if that was not enough, I tried calling Kate who wouldn't take my calls at all so I went over to see her and she was MAD! As in breathing fire MAD. So she showed me her phone and turns out Lathitha had sent her nudes from my room and the messy bed behind her was enough proof

She laughed at me, the kind of annoying laugh.

Me: really?!

Her: she really played you huh?! I warned you to play far from her

Me: yeah well lesson learnt Miss Gxaba

She kissed my cheek still laughing.

Her: sorry boo

Me: enough about my drama. Tell me about yours

Her: what about mine?

Me: you and your dad

Her: well the man has a calling

She said laughing and I couldn't help but laugh too

Me: you a PK?!

Her: HEY! He's not my father. He's a sperm donor ok!

Me: I can't believe I'm dating a PK. Does that mean I'm going to have to ask for his blessing to go out with you?

I said laughing and so did she, she hit my shoulder playfully

Her: he is not my father! Who said we dating anyway?

Me: who said we not?

She just smiled.

Her: anyway... So as I was saying, it was my first time meeting him today. The guy denied me when my mom's family went to his home to report the pregnancy, now that I ask him he says his father made him deny the pregnancy or else he would have been cut off or disowned or whatever.

Me: you kidding me right?

You could tell that this kind of hurt her even though she didn't want to show it. I mean who wouldn't be hurt to hear that their father was this kind of asshole?!

Her: I wish. Anyway, I asked him why he never tried to contact me all these years but he didn't have an answer, he kept going on and on about how he has a problem with disrespectful kids and all that. The guy is everything mom said he was and even worse. I knew what I was getting into but I kept hoping and praying that he

doesn't turn out to be what mom had said he was you know. I had that little hope

I hugged her tight as she laid on my chest. She continued to tell me what happened and the things he said to her and the things he made her say to him. I felt my chest getting wet. She was crying. But who could blame her? the guy really hurt her feelings. She didn't need him but she felt the need to reach out to him, the least he could have done was to meet her halfway, like the pastor he claims to be. So much for someone who had a calling. He and I needed to have a little chat. I hated that he would make her cry, he didn't deserve her tears. Even I didn't deserve her tears and she and I know each other longer than he and her know each other. I was kind of pissed really but my girl needed me. She needed me calm. I kept quiet and brushed her back as she laid on my chest. I don't know when she fell asleep but she was sleeping peacefully on my chest on that tiny hospital bed.

I couldn't resist taking a picture of her. she was the most adorable thing ever. As I was busy taking pictures like that my phone rang, it was Mr Bess.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

27

So my boyfriend is the son of the most powerful man in the country... I don't know how I feel about that honestly. It's exciting because he's a different person where I am concerned and another to other people. Basically he's the type that's an asshole to everyone else but me so why wouldn't I be excited?! It is scary too

because of his past, his past is not shady but too much is unsolved and I don't know if I am mentally ready to be fighting girls left right and centre because of him. But then again who ever is, right? I was woken up by his ringing phone.

Him: what now?!

He mumbled. He took it, trying very hard not to wake me up. I'm not a heavy sleeper as such plus I was in a hospital bed with my boyfriend, meaning anyone can walk in any minute.

//Him: dad

His phone was a bit loud.

Dad: son how did the meeting go?

Him: can we talk about this when I get home?

Well if I get home

Dad: where are you?

Him: I told you I'd go see Yaya

Dad: I hope you attended that meeting Derrick!

Him: I did. We will talk when I see you dad.

Bye//

I looked up at him and he tried faking a smile then he kissed my forehead.

Him: did I wake you?

Me: your phone sort of did

Him: I'm sorry

He said kissing me again on the forehead, I smiled. Melo was actually a sweet person behind everything, I was slowly seeing sides of him I didn't even know existed. But then again people are different when they are in a relationship with you. There was a knock on the door.

Him: expecting anyone?

Me: no... Come in

He looked at me as if I ruined a moment, I just smiled at him innocently. Siya walked in with a paper bag from Rocco Mamas.

Siya: well you two look cosy

Melo: oh shut up.

Siya: better thank me Yandi because if it weren't for me this ass wouldn't be here right now

Me: well thank you my friend. Come here

I said trying to get out of Melo's arms but he wouldn't let me.

Him: I'm not letting you out of my arms for you to hug another man in my presence

I couldn't help but laugh at that but Mr seemed serious. Don't tell me he's one of those territorial niggas?! There's something sexy about territorial guys. Being territorial is when someone is yours and jealousy is when a person is not yours. I don't know if I'm making sense but that's how I see things. It was very cute. Siya just laughed at him too.

Siya: I didn't know you could be jealous. I didn't even think it was possible

Him: I aint jealous, I'm territorial. She's mine now and I aint letting her go, not even to hug you. Ya'll can do that when I'm gone

I couldn't help but blush. Like why was Melo like this all of a sudden?! It was super cute of him. I don't know him like this so all this was new for me.

Siya: heh.... Look at you quoting and shiit. I never thought I'd live to see the day

We all laughed. These two were my faves no doubt, I loved them with all I was. Who needs a father when you got these two huh? Siya gave me the bag of food and Melo let me out of his arms to take the food.

Siya: because I didn't know you'd be here I bought one

Me: their food is a lot for one person

Melo got up trying to get out of bed and I gave him a death stare. Siya couldn't hold back his

left.

Siya: geeeee...

Melo: but babe this bed is not big enough

Me: yes, it is

I pouted.

Melo: aren't you the cutest. Siya isn't she cute?

Siya: if this is how you guys are going to be then I should leave. I think I liked you guys better when you were fire and water

We both just cracked up in laughter. Siya was sitting on the chair on my side of the bed. Just as we were laughing and chatting like that.

Naledi walked in with food... why are these people always carrying food to come see me? I mean I love food but this is too much even for me.

Ledi: hello Melo.

Melo: hey Ledi

Ledi: I see you finally came to your senses...
both of you

Siya: all thanks to me

Ledi: what did you do?

She gave him that questioning look

Me: he sent Melo here...

Melo: and like an idiot I jumped at the
opportunity. She's been shutting me out for way
too long this one

Me: for good reason

Them: name one

We all cracked up in laughter, I don't think any
of them were expecting that too. Ask me what
contentment is and I'll show you a picture of my
squad.

Me: really? All of you at the same time

Melo: great minds think alike

Ledi: so you were saying?

Me: your past my nana

I said touching his cheek. He faked a smile, I knew very well that we were going to talk about this when we were alone.

Siya: ooooh... and his past is the worst. Are you ready to be fighting girls left right and centre because of him?

Siya was putting me on the spot. Where to from here depended on my response, my response could either make or break this relationship before it even goes far. I had to think my response through in order not to offend anyone. This kind of conversation was meant to be had by just him and I.

Me: yes, I am. What's a relationship without a few speedbumps on the way?

He looked at me and smiled. In all honesty I wasn't ready but who ever really is? I was willing to cross the bridge when we got there.

Ledi: ncoooh I'm so proud of my baby. I raised her well

Me: what?! Excuse you!

Ledi: Melo she is the woman she is because of me so when you pay lobola, don't forget to give me a finder's fee

Siya: no. the finder's fee comes to me! I'm the one that brought them together

Ledi: and I'll be the reason they stay together dummy

Melo and I looked at each other and then back at them and just went under the covers. These two don't stop when they start. It was funny really and I loved them both.

"There are other patients in this hospital. Keep it down please."

The door closed. We all cracked up in laughter, Melo and I got out of the covers and laughed at these two.

Melo: who was that?

Ledi: some ugly ass nurse who probably got the job for sleeping with the director or something

Siya: do you ever run out of insults?

Me: nope! Babe

Siya: of cause she doesn't. I don't even know why I asked

Melo: yes boo...

Me: can't you pull some strings and get me out of here

I pouted

Him: it hasn't even been a day and already you using me?!

Me: why not? I hate hospitals. They creepy, nothing good ever comes out of a hospital

Him: kids are born in hospital

Me: I know. but kids also die in hospitals or get disabilities because of negligent nurses and

doctors

Him: huh?!

Me: think about it, had our nurses been a little nicer and caring towards pregnant persons; kids wouldn't have certain disabilities

He looked at me for a minute probably trying to process what I just said. Nurses are supposed to be nice towards patients and less judgemental. Nurses are supposed to be caring towards patients, I'm not trying to ridicule any nurses but it's in your job description to care about patients that way they make it out alive of that hospital. Yes, maybe for some people it's their time but some of them their time is cut short because of this negligence.

Him: mmmh...

Me: my aunt is a nurse and we once had this conversation, she's the one that made me aware of such

Him: let me go work my magic...

He got up out of the bed.

Siya: and then? Where to?

Me: none of your business

Ledi: ohhh so it's like this now

I just smiled and nodded. He walked out and left me with Naledi and Siya who were probably going to grill me alive...

Ledi: so.... You and Derrick huh

Siya: who knew it was possible?

Me: guys come on

Ledi: I'm actually glad my friend. I mean you like him and he likes you back

Siya: like is an understatement. Melo loves Yandiswa. He dated Kate to learn to be a good man for Yandiswa... speaking of Kate, how are you ok with being in a relationship with someone who's already in one?

Me: he and Kate are over

Ledi: what? Why? Was it you being sick?

Me: I wish... but nope. Lathitha happened

Siya: lathitha? That friend of yours?

I nodded

Ledi: what did she do?

Me: they slept together and Lathi sent Kate pictures

Their jaws dropped to the floor.

Me: I know.

Siya: even I don't know that. How come you found out before me?

Me: really? That's why your jaw is on the floor?

Ledi: that bi....tch!

Just then Melo walked in.

Him: your discharge papers are signed so we can go Missy

I opened my arms smiling like a 5-year-old waiting for sweets.

Me: come here

Ledi: what? You coming home

She said excited

Melo: no. she's coming with me

Ledi: in your wildest dreams brother

Melo: babe choose

Me: a little help here Siya

Siya: to be fair, you just got out of hospital and you need extra attention and I see no one fitter than my friend Derrick over here

He smiled and they fist bumped

Me: noooo that's not being fair. Babe, remember you said you would meet with your dad later on

Him: we can go together. You know my family loves you

Ledi: what? NO! you not meeting the in-laws just yet. Na.ah!

Siya: and they will take extra care of you at the Mansion

Ledi: if you leave with Melo just know you never getting any favours from me

Me: that's not fair!

Melo: you being unfair Ledi

Ledi: your choice friend

I looked at Ledi pouting but she looked the other way instead.

Her: I aint Melo, that won't work on me

Siya: well this just got tough

Melo: fine Naledi you win. Can I at least come drop her off at your place then?

Her: fine.

I got out of the bed while Melo packed up what I was eating, I fixed the bed and as I was busy

like that my doctor walked in.

Dr: Miss Gxaba

Me: that would be me

Dr: take it easy for the next few days and get as much rest as possible and stay away from stressful things ok?!

Melo: don't worry doc

Ledi: I'll make sure of it

Dr: take this to the pharmacy and they'll give you those

Me: thank you doc

Melo took the prescription letter for me and with that we all walked out, Ledi showed me the nurse that had walked in earlier telling them to keep it down.

Me: ok you were

Melo: don't encourage her

Me: but babe look at her, she doesn't deserve to

work here.

Ledi: she should be working in a clinic,
somewhere in the villages even

Siya: are you like this even with your boyfriend?
Well that's if you have one

Me: she shockingly does

Ledi: I never said we were dating. He has
potential ok. and yes I am this bitch even in his
presence

Siya: my friend you will have to take Yandi as far
as possible from this one before she corrupts
her

Me: we've been friends since we were 5...

Melo: and the last thing I want to do is get on
her bed side... this one is a little cookoo

I couldn't hold back the laughter, Ledi looked at
him and clicked her tongue

Ledi: I'm glad you know, that way you won't dare

mess with my friend

Siya: how is Bonke anyway?

He said laughing

Ledi: you should ask Anita that. I played my part but I didn't keep up

Me: as far as we know he will never be able to have kids

Melo: OUCH!

Ledi: serves him right

Melo: remind me NEVER to cheat on you

Siya: even I'll remind you bro. this girl crazy!

We got to the cars; Melo's, Siya's and Ledi's and I got in with Melo while the rest got in their cars and then we left the hospital with each of us headed in different directions. On the way to wherever I was busy fixing my hair, it was a mess and a half, it gave me away that I was in hospital... well one would go as far as thinking I

got laid so I had to fix it.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES
LOVE*

.

.

28-Melo

I kept stealing glances at her as she fixed her
“messed up” hair. I smiled to myself thinking
just how lucky I was she was finally mine. We
were listening to music.

Me: babe

Her: mmmh

Me: you don't mind if we go past BESS, there's
some stuff I need to take in my office

She looked at me, well I could feel her eyes pierce through my skin.

Her: it hasn't even been 24 hours yet and already you want to show me off to your colleagues

I chuckled in disbelief.

Me: excuse you?

Her: I mean I don't mind the attention but come on babe

Me: I knew you were full of yourself but this, this is some levels type of shiit

She laughed

Her: I'm kidding. Geeeeez

Me: I know... geeeeez

Her: you would think that this attitude would end now that we dating

Me: No! what for? It's what kept our relationship burning in the first place

Her: we didn't have a relationship

Me: whatever you choose to call it

Her: My GOD! Kutheni unje? (Why are you like this?)

Me: how am I?

Her: an ass.

Me: OUCH! You'd think the insults would stop now that we dating

Her: until I see some change, they'll keep rolling in young Bess

Me: don't.

Her: what?

Me: don't call me young Bess

Her: you don't want me to call you Melokuhle and now you don't want me to call you young Bess? What's your problem?

Me: only mom gets to call m Melokuhle and even so, when I've done something wrong and

the young Bess thing... that's what my dad's business associates call me and you are not either of the mentioned persons so stick to Melo or Derrick

She looked at me for the longest.

Her: Melokuhle it is.

She got out of the car and I got out too.

Me: you don't listen huh?

She flashed me that cute smile of hers. She walked over to my side of the car and we headed inside BESS while chatting. Yaya was the first girl I have ever walked in those doors with, either than my sisters or mom so you can imagine the stares I was getting.

Her: Nope! You my boyfriend and I get to call you whatever I feel like calling you. You don't hear me stopping you when you call me Yaya

Me: that's cause I thought you like me calling you Yaya

Her: almost every Yandiswa I know is called that. If it's not Yaya, its Yandi. Come up with something original young Bess

Me: as if you calling me Melokuhle is original?

Her: none of your friends call you by it. its personal

Me: none of your friends call you Yaya

Her: you don't know that

I looked at her in awe. She is always ready with an answer. How does she do it? it's not rocket science or anything but it is kind of creepy and crazy in a way. She looked at me and smiled, her smile was too cute for words. The elevator stopped and I looked at her and shook my head. We walked out of the elevator into the last floor of the building and there were a few people around including the floor's nosy receptionist.

Patricia

Pat: Mr Bess Jnr you back

Me: hi Patricia, you still here

She noticed Yandiswa behind me and her welcoming smile turned into a frown, I was so confused and lost by this behaviour of hers.

Yaya: hey

She said waving her hand at Pat who just looked at her behind her glasses and gave her the most coldest "hi".

Pat: here are your messages and your father told you to meet him at the house

Me: thanks Patricia

I took the messages and walked to my office with Yaya walking right behind me. I'm not big on introductions much especially in the work place, I like to be respected at all times. My business outside BESS is my business only. We walked into my office and I closed the door behind her.

Her: your receptionist...

Me: she's normally nice... she probably sensed your stinking attitude at a distance

She laughed at me.

Her: you must be dumber than I thought. That girl has a thing for you

I laughed at her and walked over to my desk

Me: Patricia doesn't have a thing for me, it's my first time bringing a girl to the office either than my sisters or mom who is known by every BESS employee

Her: I'm the first girl to ever make it to Melokuhle Derrick Bess's office

She said sounding flattered and trying to hide a smile

Me: don't tell me you blushing

Her: I am not. I'm just shocked that's all... so why hasn't any girl ever been up here?

Me: because I've never picked up any girl from

the hospital either than you

I was busy packing up my things as she went around the office looking for whatever she was looking for on my shelves.

Her: this is cute

Me: what is?

Her: this... look

I looked up and she was holding a picture of mom with me and my siblings when we were young. The picture was captured by dad when we went for holidays to New York

Me: oh thanks

Her: when was this? you were a cute kid

Me: I was 5. What do you mean I was cute?
What about now?

Her: what about now?

Me: really? You going to play this game with me?
Tell me I'm hotter now

She laughed at me

Her: and give your ego a boost? No thank you

Me: whatever. Put that in its place and lets go

I had my bag in my hand and was standing by the door waiting on her.

Her: but I wasn't done looking

Me: you can look some other time. Naledi set a curfew for you and I don't want you to miss it

She laughed and walked over to me. She stood in front of me and whispered

"I don't have a curfew"

Then she walked out, I spanked her sexy round firm ass and she turned and looked at me in shock and a smile

Her: what the hell?

Me: what?

Her: why'd you do that?

Me: don't act like you didn't like it now.

I said pulling her by the waist was walking with her to the elevators, Pat was still in her desk.

Me: Bye Pat

I whispered to her "say bye to Pat", She looked at me with that "are you crazy?" look.

Her: andifuni (I don't want to)

She whispered so Pat doesn't hear her

Pat: Bye Mr Bess

We walked away.

Her: you see?

Me: see what?

Her: she doesn't like me

Me: not this again.

Her: why else would she say bye to only you?

Me: cause you didn't say bye to her

Her: whatever "Mr Bess Jnr"

She said imitating Pat's voice as we waited for the elevator to reach our floor.

Me: don't test me Yaya.

Her: or what?

Me: you don't want to know. a lot goes down in an elevator

I gave her a smug while grabbing her tight ass in them jeans and she giggled.

Her: stop it

She was in front of me so people didn't see me grab it. I'm a kinky guy, almost Gideon Cross (from the 'Crossfire' series novels, Bared to you, that man is a business GOD and a sex GOD too and I only dream of becoming like him... well my father is more or less like him but you get my point) level type of kinky. The elevator stopped and we got in, it was empty and I smiled to myself. The things I would do to this girl in this elevator good God! I waited for the doors to

close before pinning her against the mirror and kissing her, something I've been wanting to do since I saw her today, she responded very well. We felt the lift stopping with the warning sound and we quickly stopped. The doors opened and some women walked in. I hid my boner with my bag and Yandi giggled.

Them: Mr Bess

Me: hello ladies

We were on the 5th floor. They continued with their conversation while Yandi and I kept stealing glances at each, glances of nothing but lust for each other. I wanted her so bad and I wanted us to pick up where we left off when we got to the parking but sadly it wasn't the underground parking... We stopped at the ground floor and everyone walked out without saying anything to each other, I said my goodbyes to security and unlocked the car. We both got in and we looked at each other and

smiled.

Me: Dammit!

Her: what?

Me: nothing. let's just go

Her: what is it?

Me: I want to strip your clothes off and sex you like never before

She looked at me in shock and she put her hand on her mouth. Her eyes were so seductive and sexy which only made me crave for her.

Her: Melokuhle!

Me: you asked didn't you?

Her: but I didn't expect an answer like that

Me: yeah well...

I looked at her once before starting the engine and driving off.

Her: you taking me to the pharmacy right?

Me: I almost forgot... ok cool that's where we going

Her: how could you forget that?

Me: uhhhhm... I don't know, maybe because we almost had sex a few minutes ago

Her: I wasn't going to have sex with you in an elevator

Me: that is up for discussion

Her: no its not. it's never going to happen!

Me: we'll just have to wait and see. You need to learn to leave a little young Gxaba

Her: oh wow...

She kept quiet and sang along to some Taylor swift that was playing on the radio, style. I called Elizabeth my cousin, she worked at a pharmacy.

//Me: Liz

Her: hey Derrick... what's up?

Me: you working?

Her: did you see the time?

Me: it's just after 3

Her: exactly. My shift is over

Me: fine....

Her: what did you want?

Me: we need medication

Her: you and who?

Me: does it matter

Her: I'm not buying you morning after pills again
Derrick

Me: what? No! Yandiswa has a prescription
letter from a doctor. Plus, that was one time!

Her: read me the meds and let me search for
them

I removed the phone from my ear.

Me: babe please read the medication names for

me

Her: have you seen this person's hand writing?

Me: try please

She looked at the letter but still no luck. She shook her head

Me: fine

I put the phone on my ear again

Me: we can't read this person's hand writing dude

Her: take a picture of it then and send it to me

Me: will do. Thanks Liz

Her: whatever. Bye Derrick

Me: bye cuz//

I gave Yaya my phone.

Me: please take a picture of the letter and send it to Liz

My phone was already on WhatsApp on Liz's

contact ready to take a picture.

Her: ok...

She did as told

Her: done.

Me: great, can I have my phone back

Her: wait

Me: what are you doing?

Her: what are you worried about?

Me: everything actually. You might see things you don't like and then you'll hate me for them

Her: I'll take my chances

Me: fine. Suit yourself then

I heard camera sounds and then there was a sense of relief. For a second I thought she was reading my WhatsApp chats or going through my pictures.

Her: you have the latest iPhone and you think I

aint goin take pictures with it?

Me: that better be all you doing Yandiswa

Her: let your guard down. this is your phone and I know better

I decided not to respond to that piece. That comment came with a lot of hidden feelings behind it. Nobody touches my phone, not even Asemahle. I have a lot to hide on my phone, stuff I have not yet cleared and its only now that I'm getting into a serious relationship and will delete everything when I get the chance to. I have girls I was flirting with, I have nudes from dozens of chicks and all these things need me to sit down and delete and block people.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

29

Under normal circumstances the conversation we indirectly had would bother me but then again I sort of know the person he is and what I have signed up for by becoming his girlfriend, going through his phone would be signing my death form if such exists. I would have more than just a panic attack, it would be a straight off death warrant because I know for a fact that I would come across a lot of things that I as a girlfriend would never recover from which in turn would make me look at him in a whole new way from the way I see him now.

“Babe you ok?”

I was disturbed by him when he had stopped by the robots, I didn't notice I was lost in thoughts until he reminded me we were still driving together.

Me: yeah I'm fine

I had even stopped taking the pictures I was taking by then with his phone in my hand

Him: you sure?

Me: yes, babe I'm sure

He looked at me for a while before the robots opened for him and then he drove off.

Him: need me to unlock that for you?

Me: no... not really, you'll just send me the pictures when you get a chance to ok

I said kissing his cheek and faking a smile.

Him: Yaya

Me: Kuhle

Him: no! off all things you go for Kuhle

Me: you told me to quit calling you Melokuhle.

Him: I have two names babe and you can use one of the two or Melo

Me: you have serious issues I swear. Anyway you that's not what you wanted to talk to me about

Him: right... never mind, we'll have this conversation some other day when we both sitting down ok?

Me: uhhhmm... ok. if you say so

He parked in front of the pharmacy and we went out of the car and I gave him his phone back before walking in together, him letting me walk in front of him of cause. We headed straight to the dispensary and he was called to the table by this beautiful skinny white lady whom I'm assuming is his cousin Elizabeth, he called me to go along with him and so I did.

Her: don't get used to this. you don't have shares here

Him: but I have a cousin here

Her: you the friend... Yandiswa is it?

She said smiling and pulling out her left hand with a ring finger on it. I smiled and nodded with a confused look, how did she know me?

Her: I'm Elizabeth Stone. I know you because this other weekend my cousin's and I stalked you on Facebook and Instagram and I must say you are even prettier in person

Of cause she stalked me. Why am I not surprised? Seems like a lot of people that know Melo may have stalked my Facebook account for some reason... did this mean that Melo was really into me and wasn't tripping? I mean I am flattered if that is the case. Elizabeth wasn't at the Sunday lunch that Sunday mama Bess had invited because her husband decided to take her away on a romantic weekend.

Me: it is a pleasure to finally meet you. Beautiful ring by the way and beautiful owner too

Him: really? That's the best you could come up with?

Me: what?

Liz: don't mind him. He's like this with everyone

She said rolling her eyes at him

Her: anyway, can I have the letter, medical aid and your id

I searched for the things in my bag and I gave them to her and she started clicking away on the computer in front of her

Her: you the daughter of doctor Babalwa?

Me: hihi yes I am

Him: oh God! Why am I not surprised you know her mom?

Her: I met her mom when I accompanied your mom to Alexis' funeral dummy

Him: I'm sure you did.

Her: you forget that I am older than you huh?

Him: you forget that I am not bothered at all

Her: keep your friend in check Yandiswa

With that she went to the back to print the slip's
I would be signing in order to take the meds.

Him: I'll make sure you do when the time is right

He said squeezing my ass

Me: stop that! You so dirty minded!

Him: don't act so surprised Missy

Me: I'm not but control yourself

Him: you kind of making it hard to

He said with a smug and just then Liz came
back and she told me how to take the
medication and when to take it and then told
me where to sign and after that we said our
goodbyes and headed to the car.

Him: you will have to get used to me perverting
over you.

Me: do I have a choice?

Him: you either perve over me too or let me

perve in peace missy

I smiled to myself. At least he wasn't hiding how he was lusting over me and I kind of liked that. I enjoyed that my boyfriend was giving me this kind of attention and still manage to show me love at the same time with just a single look. Derrick didn't have to tell me loved me because his eyes did that for him. He looked at me in a way I don't think anyone ever has before, well when he wasn't perving of cause.

Him: can you drive?

Me: what do you think?

Him: you don't look like you can, hence I'm asking

Me: well yeah, I can drive

Him: who taught you?

Me: my uncle

Him: do you have a licence?

Me: I just turned 18 a few days ago

Him: typical Xhosa's... I ask you one thing and you answer with the most irrelevant answer

He said rolling his eyes at me, I punched him playfully

Me: that means you also do the same seeing that you half of what I am

Him: actually I am 70% white and 30% Xhosa

Me: really now?!

Him: yeah. I am literally a split image of my dad, his complexion and all

Me: you have your mother's features

Him: a little but Asemahle took them all. Can we go back to what we were talking about before this whole Xhosa thing

Me: to answer you, No I don't have a licence but I do have a learners

Him: when are you planning on making your

licence?

Me: I'll probably book to take the test when I'm back home

Him: and when will that be?

Me: I'm leaving Durban on the 15th I think... I'm still undecided

Him: why don't you book here?

Me: I'm scared of Durban traffic

Him: and you think driving in Mthatha is better?

Me: I feel like if you can drive in Mthatha then you can drive anywhere

Him: Mthatha will be super busy this time of the year

Me: I know...

Him: do as you wish Miss...come let's go in

It was only then that I noticed we had just parked inside the mansion yard. So he was distracting me with this conversation because

he knew very well that I was not going to agree to coming with him here.

Me: you're a sly fox you know that

Him: I knew you wouldn't want to come here; I did what needed to be done

Me: whatever

We got out of the car and he took some file out of his bag in the boot and then we headed inside. Mrs Bess was busy cooking up a storm singing along.

Him: hey mom

He said kissing her on the cheek

Me: hi Mrs Bess

Her: what a surprise. How are you Yandi?

Me: I'm good Ma and how are you?

Her: I'm great. Why didn't you tell me you were bringing Yandiswa over?

Him: it was a spare of the moment thingy,

besides I'm just here to drop this and then I take her home

Her: well that's nice of you

Him: mom don't start please

This woman was always beautiful and dressed to kill. She looked like she had just got home because she was still in her classy red dress with an apron over her outfit and sleepers on her feet, hair loosely hanging over her shoulders. She was just beautiful, she was goals!

Her: fine. Your father is in the lounge with your sister

Him: which one?

Her: Asemahle, Iyana went out with Ngawo

Him: where do they stand anyway?

Her: you will have to ask her that. Last time I checked she wanted to end things

Him: I hope she goes through with it, the guy is

too boring for her

Her: remember Ngawo is the reason Iyana is where she is today, he came into her life when she was drowning a....

Him: she doesn't owe the guy anything, you can't stay with someone all because you feel like you owe them your life. I mean mom come on you and I both know that there's no love there. You don't come out of the friend zone successfully. Most relationships like that never really last anyway

Her: and you would know right? Honey help yourself to something to drink in the fridge or something to snack on. Sorry my son is not into that whole hospitality thing

Him: she has a ton of food in the car mom

He said rolling his eyes.

Her: the glasses are in that cupboard sweetie

She said pointing a cupboard on the upper shelf.

Me: thank you Mah

I stuck my tongue out at Melo and went to get the glass, washed it and poured myself some juice.

Him: anyway let me go give this to dad. I'm sure you want to see your friend

Her: last time I checked you two couldn't stand each other... how is it that you two rode in the same car?

Him: she had a panic attack today and she needed me to fetch her. well Siya was kind of busy so he asked me to go fetch her instead

I'm glad he lied. I wasn't ready to be playing daughter in law to Mrs Bess yoh!

Her: shame mahn, are you ok? what caused it?

Me: I'm fine thank you

Him: she's fine. Boy problems mom

Her: what? You don't have a boyfriend

Me: really Melokuhle?! I had a meeting with my father and it didn't go well

Her: I'm so sorry baby. Come here

She said opening her arms wide for me. This woman was Godly. She was so loving and motherly

Him: what? NO!

I stood up and went to hug Mrs Bess and her hug was so soothing and calming, it was that motherly hug that assured you that everything was going to be ok. she made me miss my mother. She broke the hug after a while.

Her: he will be punished for whatever he did ok baby.

I so wanted to cry right now. This was just what I needed. At that moment reality hit me hard, I needed to go home and be with my mom. I needed her kind words, her warm motherly hug and to just cry about what I experienced today.

Him: ok... you will find me in the lounge

Mrs Bess was rubbing my shoulders.

Me: thank you. I needed that

Her: you welcome. Look if you ever want to talk or you just need some motherly love and advice, I am here ok. I know how much it sucks to be far from home and not have that mother figure there when you need them the most and a phone call never really fills that void. My home is always open baby

Me: thank you so much Ma

Her: plus, your mother said to keep an eye on you

She said gracing me with her ever so beautiful smile and I smiled back. Of cause my mom would ask Mrs Bess to keep an eye on me, it's so her plus she admires this woman so it's only fitting.

Me: of cause she would say that.

Just then Ase walked in all happy.

Her: Siya called me earlier. How are you holding up?

She said pulling me in for a hug while her mom went back to her cooking.

Me: I'm ok thank you

She broke the hug.

Her: had somebody not taken away my keys I would have stopped by to see you

Mom: hahaha nice try Missy.

Ase: you and Derrick in the same car without murdering each other... how did that happen?

Mom: that is a really good question

Me: Siya threatened him

Mom: of cause

They both laughed. Just then Iyana walked in and threw herself in her mother's arms.

Mom: that bad?

She said brushing her back.

Asemahle suggested we sit on the high chairs.

Ase: what happened?

Iya got out of her mother's embrace and dried her eyes.

Iya: it's over. I gave him his ring back and it wasn't easy at all. He didn't make it easy mom.

Mom: but honey break ups are never easy.

Iya went to get herself some water. I felt so awkward because none of this had anything to do with me. She drank some water and turned to look at us.

Iya: hey Yandi... I'm sorry you had to witness me like this

Me: its ok. I'm actually sorry you going through what you going through

Mom: so what really happened? I hope you guys

didn't meet at a restaurant

Iya: I'm not that insensitive mom. We met at his apartment, we had lunch and after lunch I told him that there was no easy way of doing this so I handed him his ring. He asked what it meant and I told him that I couldn't do this anymore, I couldn't keep lying to myself and to him mom. Ngawo is a great friend, he is more of a friend than he is a lover to me. I guess I always knew that and always felt that way but losing the baby hit the nail on the head and made me realise that I'll never be as happy as I want to be, there's always going to be that void that he can't fill. I want what you and dad share and I feel like I won't get it with Ngawo. I've always felt like that and I told him all of this and he did not take it well, the way he begged me. He was even crying saying that how could I do this to him, said it's bad enough he had just lost his baby and now this. it was just painful mom

She wiped her tears away. Ase walked up to her

and pulled her in for a hug.

Ase: you did what you needed to do. It wouldn't have been fair on any of you guys to stay in a dead relationship. You tried to love him with your all but you couldn't and that's ok because you only human. Don't beat yourself up about it ok?!

she nodded.

We continued chatting and comforting Iyana until she was laughing and ok with the situation. I loved how they didn't dwell on this whole sad emotion thing. I'm not saying they got over things quick but they didn't stay in that sad moment for a long period of time, life went on for them and I realised that this was just beautiful. It was good that they were these kind of people because then Melo might just be this kind of person too.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

30-Melo

I left mom and Yaya in the kitchen to bond, I know mom likes her but I want her to more than like her. I want her to embrace her as her daughter that way she won't be so judgey when I introduce Yandiswa as my girlfriend to her. I got to the lounge and my sister was under dad's arm watching whatever on that was playing on tv.

Me: hello dad, Mahle

Dad: you finally decided to show up

Her: hey bro. did you hear about Yandi?

Me: yes, and she's in the kitchen with mom by

the way

Her: you joking right

She said jumping off under dad's arm in excitement

Me: go and see for yourself.

She walked out in a happier mood. So not I was left with just dad.

Him: so what is it about this "Yandi"?

Me: I told you dad, she's different from the others and that's not why I'm here. Patricia said you summoned me

Him: I didn't summon you, I just said meet me here. I want to know how the meeting went

Me: your friend gave me a hard time; he didn't want to deal with me but eventually he came around

Him: that's what I like to hear! I taught you well son

Me: right... I wasn't here to stay so I'm going to head out

Him: tell me about this girl. one minute you want to be with her and the next you don't and then suddenly you leaving work early to go visit her

Me: I think my actions speak for themselves
father

Him: where does that leave Kate?

Me: we broke up, well she broke things off with me

Him: what did you do?

Me: I slept with this other chick

Him: are you that unable to keep it in your pants Derrick? What is it with you and pussy?

Me: it was Yandiswa ok! she had made me so mad that I needed to retaliate dad

Him: and you couldn't hit a punching bag and go

shoot some hoops like any sane person? Did you at least use a condom?

Shiiit!!! I didn't use a condom with Kate. I just hope and pray that she got the morning after pill, the last thing I want is a repetition of what mom and dad went through with Iyana's mom. I don't want to put Yandiswa in that situation.

Him: NO Derrick! Dammit!

Me: relax dad I used it ok. its Kate that I didn't use it with

He ran his hand through his hair frustrated.

Him: are you ready to be a father Derrick?

Me: what? No! I still have graduation

Him: then what the f*ck are you thinking going around having sex without a condom huh?

He was now shouting; well thank god the walls were sound proof.

Me: it was a once off thing and it was a mistake

Him: you better hope and pray that she's not pregnant Derrick. I really don't know what goes on in that head of yours

Me: dad please!

Him: it's your life. Do as you please, that's what you and your sister have always done anyway

With that he downed his scotch and he walked out to the study. I just sat down and thought about the possibility of Kate being pregnant with my child. She hates me so she would probably terminate that child. I dialled her number but she wouldn't pick up, I called her using the house phone and she answered after some time.

//Her: hello?

Me: Kate please don't hang up.

Her: what do you want?

Me: did you ever buy the morning after pill?

She kept quiet for a while before responding.

Her: no I didn't. shiit!! You didn't remind me

Me: it slipped my mind

Her: what if I'm pregnant?

Me: let's not get ahead of ourselves

Her: yeah you probably right. I had already had my period anyway when we had sex

Me: so we safe right?!

Her: I hope so

Me: Kate I'm s....

Her: don't ok. just don't Derrick!

Me: Kate please

Her: you promise said you wouldn't hurt me Derrick, you said you would never hurt me intentionally. You begged me to give you a chance Derrick not the other way round. But then what was I expecting from a f*ckboy right? this is your style anyway. Nobody can change you but I just hope all of this was worth it. have

a nice life and please don't ever call me! //

I had really screwed up. I hate myself because I convinced Kate to let her guard down and let me in, I made her believe that she could be my salvation... well I thought she would be but life has a funny way right? I mean I really did not hurt Kate intentionally, the last thing I wanted was for things to go this way but in the midst of it all I am glad I ended up with the girl I've been wanting for a very long time. I walked out to the kitchen and the girls were having a cosy conversation, Iyana was back. She looked like she had been crying, that's how well I know my sister.

Her: hey dad junior

She said giving me a tight hug.

Me: hello sister

I said pushing her off of me and she laughed, I was left smelling of her sweet scent. Just great!

Her: I've missed you

Me: I'd love to say I've missed you too but you've left me smelling like you, giving me less reason to miss you. What's my girlfriend going to say when I rock up at her place smelling like another woman?

Everyone in the room cracked up in laughter. I wasn't trying to flatter Yandi or whatsoever but by the looks of things I managed to flatter her.

Iya: she better know that you have a sister, two of them

Mom: and a mother too

Me: she'll know now. I just hope she's not the jealous type

I said rolling my eyes

Ase: yeah hopefully

Me: Yandi

Yaya: yes

Me: tell me you wouldn't freak and throw a fit if your boyfriend came home smelling of another woman either than you? Be honest

Mom: who wouldn't freak? I mean who had the audacity to get that close to my man

Me: dad has a sister mom

Mom: and I know the perfume she uses

Me: so you mean to tell me that my girlfriend should know how all of you guys smell?

Ase: yes!

Me: this question was directed to Yandiswa by the way.

Iya: you always picking on her. I'm really convinced you like her

Ase: these two are water and Ice! They would never happen

Yaya: to answer you Melokuhle.

My mom and siblings went "ooooh". Bet they

didn't expect Yandiswa to call me Melokuhle.

Ase: she even calls you Melokuhle... wow!

Iya: even I'm not allowed to call you Melokuhle!

Me: she doesn't listen. That's just how much she hates me and I'm forced to drive her to her place by the way

Mom just laughed at us.

Yaya: as I was saying. I would throw a fit; I mean my man coming home smelling of another woman means he's been busy with another woman to that extent

Me: even if he has siblings?

Ase: well you haven't introduced us to her so how is she supposed to know?

Yaya: Asemahle is right. I mean then he can cheat and get away with it by claiming it's his sisters or mom

Mom: good point

Me: right. anyway we should go, it's getting late and I have a lot of work to do

Mom: I keep telling your father not to overwork you. We never get to see you

Iya: mom that is code for "I'm going to visit my girlfriend so bye now"

We all just laughed. Iya just had to huh?! I pushed her and went over to mom

Mom: you are old enough Melo, its ok to mention you going to your girlfriend ok?

Me: I'm not going to answer that.

I pulled her in for a kiss on the cheek.

Me: bye mom, I will see you tomorrow I think and bye family

Yaya: bye guys

She hugged my mom and Ase walked Yandiswa out while I waited in the car. I hooted for them to finish quick and Yaya came running to the

car

Me: I will leave your ass here

Her: wouldn't you love that

Me: whatever!

Her: why would you put me in the spot like that?

What the hell Melo?

I chuckled. She was so cute busy boiling up over nothing.

Her: it's not funny!

Me: you so cute

She clicked her tongue and rolled her eyes.

Me: you so sexy when you do that!

She just pressed her phone and ignored me

Me: don't tell me you mad?!

Her: nope. I'm just ignoring your ass that's all

Me: anyway. Where do you want to have our first date?

Her: I thought you didn't offer me food because I have food in your car?

Me: I was saving your appetite for our date dummy!

Her: I'm really starting to have my doubts about you

Me: don't. so where should we eat?

Her: I'm not that hungry

Me: but you need to take your meds and I am hungry

She smiled. What is it with your girls and being flattered by the most unromantic weird stuff ever? I mean it's crazy how meaningless things make you guys smile or blush. You are just creepy creatures.

Her: let's just go to Gateway, its closer to both our places anyway

Me: great. Where to there?

Her: I picked a mall, now you pick the next one

Me: if you don't pick a spot now, you will pay the bill. So pick a place

Her: you such a bully. Mimmo's will do

Me: great.

I drove off to gateway while listening to that calming music, I couldn't stop thinking about the conversation with my dad and the possibility of Kate being pregnant.

Her: Melo you ok?

Me: what?

Her: I've been talking to you for the past 5 minutes but no luck. You ok?

Me: I had unprotected sex with Kate

I didn't want to start our relationship with me keeping things from her. I didn't want to be that guy who doesn't talk to his partner about things until they've piled up and I just can't keep them

in anymore so this was the way to go.

Her: ok.... where are you going with this?

Me: she didn't get the morning after pill. We both forgot to buy it

She kept quiet. Her silence was deafening really.

Me: please say something

Her: so I should expect pregnancy in the long run?

Me: maybe.... Maybe not

Her: did you at least use a condom with Lathitha?

Me: yes!

Her: you and Kate happened before me so I guess I have no choice

I parked the car and we went in and were allocated to a table for two. This was bothering her in a way but she didn't want to say it.

Me: I know its bothering you. Please tell me

what you thinking

Her: I don't know if I should

Me: the reason I told you about Kate is because I don't want us to leave things unresolved and wait for them to pile up to a point that we can't hold them in anymore. I want us to be open with each other Yandiswa.

She nodded.

Me: so please tell me what you thinking

I said touching her hand.

Her: I guess I knew that at some point in our relationship this would come, given your past and all but please remember that I am human and I can only take so much. I really like you Melo and I want to see us go far but that will require the both of us. You have a string of girls in your past that I am not ready to face but need to prepare for because I am in a relationship with you. I can't lie I am scared but I am willing

Me: I know that my past will always be a problem in our relationship because of how messed up it is but I am hoping I can get rid of all of them by the end of this week. Things won't be easy; I know but please bear with me. Please stay. I noticed you have a tendency to push people away when they've wronged you, please don't do that with me. Please let's talk about something when its bothering you so that we can get it out of the way and move on. Yandiswa I love you and I really want to make us work.

I know I said words similar to these to Kate but Yandiswa is not Kate, I'm not getting into a relationship hoping to learn how to love for the next girl. I'm getting into a relationship with her hoping to learn how to love her the way she deserves to be loved and should be loved. I want to love her for me and for herself. I want to love parts of her she hates and every part of her she loves. I just want us to work. We

ordered our food and waited for it while talking about us, what we can tolerate in a relationship and what we can't, likes and dislikes, we were pretty much getting to know each other in a more personal level. She was the only child, she was close to her mom but mostly her grandmother, she has dozens of cousins, she has 3 aunts and 1 uncle, she currently lives with her mom when in Mthatha but she visits her granny every day, her closest cousin is studying Accounting in NMMU, and pretty much all that other deep stuff. Time flew and before we knew it, it was just after 7 and the restaurant was preparing to close. We went to buy McFlurry at MacD before going to drop her off at her place. We got to her place and I parked the car and we continued chatting till it was past 10, we kissed and then she got off with her food and Meds. I waited for her to get inside the house and close the door before driving off back to my place. I slept a happy man knowing just how in love I

was with the girl of my dreams. The mother of my future kids.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

31

The problem with dating Amahle and Damon Bess's son is that you don't know what to buy him for his birthday because whatever gift you can think of, he probably has already. Naledi and I have been roaming around Gateway for the past 2 hours trying to get this guy the perfect gift. This is the same guy who bought a R1500 NWJ set yet he didn't even know me so whatever I get him would have to be within that

range. It's been two weeks since we started dating and he has been too good to me, almost unbelievable actually; he has been perfect, not that I'm complaining because he treated me like a queen. It was his birthday this weekend and it was Thursday and I still hadn't gotten the perfect gift.

Ledi: we've been here for two damn hours Yandiswa. Pick something already

We were at Edgars looking at watches.

Me: I can't just pick anything Ledi, it has to be perfect

Her: you want the perfect gift?

Me: that's what we've been looking for the past two hours

Her: give him sex. He's already gone two weeks without it

Me: I don't want something cliché. I'm pretty sure he gets sex on his birthday every year

Her: not from his girlfriend though.

I kept quiet and thought for a second, Naledi gave me an idea.

Her: I know that smile

Me: come lets go

I said pulling her hand dragging her to cotton on.

Her: where are we going?

Me: you'll see! Let's go

We went to cotton on and headed straight to the lingerie section. I looked through but I still couldn't find what I want

Her: what are you looking for?

Me: I want the perfect matching underwear set

Her: so you going to sex him to sleep... right?

She said with the widest smile ever, if you know that smile a 5-year-old puts on when she's about to get candy or her favourite food.... Well that was Naledi.

Me: I didn't say that. Let's go to Musgrave please

Her: you are going to buy me petrol I swear!

Me: fineeeee!

We walked out to the parking lot to her car, she and I drove off to Musgrave. We went straight to Woollies lingerie shop and they had exactly what I wanted. I wanted to be as sexy as Beyoncé on Partition, I wanted to give Melo a show on his birthday... one he would never forget. When we were done we went to Wimpy to buy something to eat, it was just after 12pm.

Her: lunch is on you

Me: obviously!

I said rolling my eyes at her

Her: so does Mr Bess give you cash???

Me: too soon Ledi! Way too soon

Her: so he hasn't given you cash?

Me: does it matter?

Her: yes actually.

Me: fine. Yes he sent me money today when I told him you and I were going out

Her: so you get a girlfriend allowance

Me: geeeeeze Naledi!

A waitress came to take our orders and then she left. Immediately after she left my phone rang, it was bae. I looked at Ledi and smiled, she rolled her eyes.

//Him: afternoon beautiful

Me: hey handsome

Him: how are you? How's your day so far?

Me: its good actually, Ledi and I are at Musgrave wimpy. How's your day?

Him: craving your presence... I am ready to quit now

Me: aaah is it that bad?

Him: you have no idea. I've been working with my father on this big case, we worked through lunch... I'm so tired

Me: I'll come over tonight ok?

Him: really?

Me: yeah, I'll come give you a massage ok

Him: and you wonder why I love you?

I giggled like a teenager head over heels.

Him: right... I'll come fetch you after work ok? oh and uhhm tomorrow later on there's a pre party at my home, family and friends

Me: let me guess.... I need to dress up?

Him: hahaha yep... but you have all the right dresses so chill

Me: yoh!

Him: relax. Anyway enjoy the rest of your day
Yaya

Me: enjoy the rest of yours. Kisses

Him: kisses//

Ledi looked at me and shook her head.

Me: what?

Her: you love him!

Me: maybe

I said blushing and playing with the straw in my drink

Her: why haven't you told him?

Me: I feel like it's too soon

Her: but he tells you all the time

Me: and it's premature of him.

Her: so?

Me: come on Ledi you know what I mean

Her: no I don't actually

Me: I love Melo but it is too soon in our relationship to be exchanging "I love you's".

Her: same way it's too soon to be having sex?

Me: I never said it's too soon for it... he hasn't initiated it

Her: have you?

Me: many times. But nothing, he just doesn't want to

Her: ncoooh that's so sweet of him, he's being a gentleman

Me: yeah I guess... anyway....

"I heard you dating Melo now. was that your plan all along"

I was cut off by Lathitha. Here comes the drama that comes with dating Melokuhle, I'm shocked it came rather sooner than it was expected. I mean we not public as per say but we are a couple and you can tell from a distance that we are pretty much in love.

Ledi: was ruining the guy's first relationship not enough?

Lathi: I wasn't talking to you, I was talking to

Yandiswa

Me: no actually it was never my plan, but it was his. He came to you to get to me and I must say you gave it up easier than expected

Lathi: is that what you tell yourself to sleep at night

Me: no. but I know my boyfriend and I know that he was never interested in you to begin with and he was never going to be for as long as I'm available

Ledi looked at me in awe and also with a smile, she was like a proud mother watching her daughter scoring all the goals.

Lathi: you don't know me huh

Me: I do actually but by all means try me

Lathi: he will screw it up, you know he always does just like he did with Kate

Me: that was all on me actually. You see I pissed him off and like any normal person he

needed to blow off some steam and you were available... need I continue

I could see her boiling, she looked at me once and stormed off. I wasn't as confident with what I was saying but I didn't want to give her the satisfaction. She managed to scare Kate off but I'm not Kate, not to say I fight for men or anything but now I already know the whole story of how they even came to sleep together so I was a bit at ease but if this was how the girls he's been with are going to be towards me then he and I were going to have problems. I didn't sign up for this at all.

Ledi: ok... who was that and what have you done to my best friend?

Me: if I'm going to be dealing with one of Melokuhle's past then I'll have to step out of my shell and learn how to handle these people

Her: you such a badass. I am so proud of you; I mean I didn't even have to say a thing

Me: don't get used to it though

Her: why now? I am pretty sure that there is a lot where that came from. You are dating Durban's hottest eligible bachelor and he's only 20

Me: really Naledi?!

Her: yes really. But if you feel like all of this is too much then you can always back down, this was not what you signed up for at the end of the day

Me: it's not that I want to tap out or whatever but I don't know if this is the life I want to live for as long as I am with him.

Her: you handled Lathitha like a pro that's for sure and you will keep handling the rest like a pro

Me: Melo needs to get these girls in check

Her: and he will, if he hasn't already. Cut the guy some slack ok. so what is the reason for his

hoe phase anyway? We all hoe for a reason.

Me: he's sister told me one reason but he told me another

Her: what did his sister say?

Me: that he was hurt in high school

Her: and what did he tell you?

Me: in his first year he made this girl pregnant, when she was 4 months she lost the baby. I'm the first person he's ever told this to. The girl committed suicide, the one girl he ever loved, so from there on he vowed to himself that he wouldn't get attached to any girl anymore, he wasn't ready for the baby but he was still heartbroken when she miscarried their baby

Her: and you mean to tell me that his parents or the girl's parents don't know the real reason she killed herself?

Me: nope, only he knows

Her: shame man. Who could blame him for

hoeing around

Me: I guess

Melo told me this last Sunday when we were chilling at his place, we had a heart to heart moment where we shared personal things about each other and I also told him about my ex. It all made sense to me why he lived the life he lived, he was scared that the same thing might happen again if he got attached to someone. I noticed Melo loves easily.

Her: wow!

Me: I know friend.

Her: how long have you known?

Me: since Sunday. I've been contemplating telling you

Her: you know I would never judge or bring this up

Me: I know but still, he told me this and asked me not to tell anyone but I feel like I needed to

offload on someone

Her: that's what I'm here for, for you to offload on me. I know it's not easy knowing this about your man babe

Me: yeah. Enough about my boyfriend's sad depressing past. Have you bought something to wear to the party Saturday?

Her: it's a boat party. A bikini will do

Later on it will move to the club idiot!

Her: really? I didn't know

Me: of cause you didn't

Her: not all of us are dating the birthday boy and friends with his sister. How is this whole thing working out for you guys anyway?

Me: what thing?

Her: keeping this from his family?

Me: we not ready to let them in on this

Her: what happens when they find out?

Me: I don't know. we love this game we playing around them

Her: and you don't think anyone has noticed?

I shook my head

Me: those people aren't the type that lets things go... they attend it ASAP. If they knew we were dating, someone would have already said something by now

Her: mmmmh I see. While you guys were talking, you mentioned something about dressing up

Me: tomorrow there's some sort of pre-party at his home and I need to dress up

Her: why are we still sitting here and not shopping for the perfect dress?

Me: because friend I have a ton of dresses

Her: church dresses. You need to leave an impression. What if he introduces you?

I chuckled

Me: nah, Melo would never do that. He knows it's too soon and I'm not ready to be known as his girlfriend just yet

Her: his father dated his wife for two years and then proposed... I doubt patience is in his genes

Me: nah, he's not introducing me anytime soon.

I said settling the bill and we walked out. To look for a dress... we couldn't find one so I suggested we go to Gateway or Pavilion. We stopped for petrol before going to gateway.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

32-Melo

Things between us have been great between us, even perfect if there's such. this weekend I got to open up to her about the real reason I am became the person I became before her and she didn't judge or anything like that, instead she understood me and made do with everything. We haven't had sex; I want to do things right by her. I want to be the man I failed to be with Kate. I cleared the whole roster for her, I blocked every girls' number and deleted every nude I've ever received from any girl. We were happy and that's how I wanted things to stay between us, we were able to spend the night just talking and taking pictures without sex. Yes! Melokuhle Bess can actually survive without sex and I'm ok with the way things are. So maybe I lied about working through lunch, I actually managed to track her father down and I was meeting him in a bit. I asked he come to BESS, Patricia brought him to my office.

Him: Derrick Bess, nice to meet you again

Me: I can't really say the feeling is mutual.

I thought her dad was someone I did not know but the man was actually Linda's uncle, my friend who had a 21st birthday/graduation party that weekend. Well yeah that was the man that was my girlfriend's father. I wouldn't say we know each other really but he and I have met through my father and through Linda's mom. He and her don't really get along hence he wasn't at his niece's graduation party.

Him: so why am I here

Me: to talk about your daughter

Him: what about Sino?

Sinothando is his daughter, the girl Yandiswa was talking to at the party when I asked to speak to her in private.

Me: really? Is Sino your only daughter?

Him: of cause she's not but she's the only one you know

Me: what about Yandiswa? Doesn't she count as your daughter? Or is it because you made her when you were still in university?

Him: where do you get this information?

Me: does it matter? Yandiswa had a panic attack because of you and I don't like seeing her hurt

Him: where are you getting at Derrick?

Me: how's ministry going?

Him: it's going ok, why do you ask?

Me: do the rest of the pastors know that you denied your own daughter, not once but twice

Him: I didn't deny her

Me: then what do you call what you did? You had an opportunity to make things right by her but you didn't, why?

Him: I don't have to listen to this

Me: there will come a time in your life where

you will need her and she won't need you. I suggest you make things right with her before it's too late, she has a forgiving heart by nature

Him: what does this have to do with you anyway?

Me: she's my girlfriend and I care about her. if you were not her father we would probably be having a different conversation than the one we are currently having right now. but because I love her and care about her and I want what is best for her, I am actually asking you to make things right with her; just because I am asking you to make things right that doesn't mean I'm saying try playing daddy because it's a little too late but all I'm saying is that as the man of God you claim to be, do things right. the last thing you need is things going badly for you all because you couldn't let your pride down and do right by your daughter. You can go, we done here

He looked at me once before getting up from

the chair opposite me and leaving. I could have handled things differently but I handled them in a manner mom would have handled them, that's how she handled her father in law anyway.

When he was gone I continued with what I got paid to do and then later on I went home first, we needed to discuss this birthday thing. When I got home mom was in the lounge with her husband sitting cosy watching tv.

Me: Mr and Mrs Bess

They turned.

Mom: hey baby, how are you?

I went to kiss her cheek and went to sit down

Dad: hey son.

Me: got the place to yourselves?

Mom chuckled

Her: actually yes we do, lyana got an apartment and your twin is helping her move in

Me: I'm surprised you not there... wait, dad's here so it makes sense

Dad: heh! I will kick you boy

Mom: this girl you with is making you disrespectful as of late

Me: what girl?

Mom: don't play dumb with me. So when do we get to meet her?

Me: there is no her. stop being nosy. Anyway let me leave you guys to whatever you two were doing before I interrupted

Mom and dad both laughed.

Mom: heh yazi wena Melokuhle (you know what Melokuhle) ...

She shook her head

Dad: your son is silly. You ruined him

Mom: what? No! you did.

Dad: what did I do?

Me: you guys are not alone. Just a reminder.

Mom what time is this thing tomorrow?

Mom: 6pm sharp, don't be late

Me: I make no promises

I said rolling my eyes. It's not even something big

Dad: I bumped into Bashe today... said he was there to see you

Me: oh yea...

Him: about?

Me: nothing BESS related

Him: oh ok.

Mom: is Yandiswa free tomorrow? I'd like her to come over

Me: what is it with you and her anyway?

Her: her mother told me to keep an eye on her that's all

Me: right... of cause she did

Mom: what did she ever do to you?

Me: nothing. Anyway I should go. Tell Mahle to call me when she gets back

Dad: did you try calling her?

Me: countless times but she's not answering.

Mom: we'll tell her

Me: before or after you two are done taking each other down

I said singing Chris Browns Take you down and doing the dancing to go with it while laughing at them. Mom got up and started chasing me around the lounge, dad just sat there laughing at us. Mom and I played like kids and it was very much fun for a 40-something year old and a 20-year-old.

Her: I'm going to get you

Me: geez mom I was only joking....

Maybe not, we both know you guys get down to it around this house

I said laughing on the other side of the room and he on the other. She just sat down and laughed really hard.

Mom: I'm defeated. Damon do something

Dad: we both know he's right honey

Dad said kissing mom's cheek, she nudged him

Him: OUCH! geez woman

Mom: serves you right. Derrick is a child and he does not need to know our business

Me: but I already know your business. It's a good thing that you guys haven't lost that spark in your marriage, keep it up

I said taking my things and walking out with a big smile. My parents were goals, their marriage was a dream, it was perfect. They were perfect for each other. They fought but the next day they would wake up in a much different mood

than last night's and I wanted that, I can't imagine staying mad at my woman for days. I got into my car and drove to Yandiswa's place, I got to the gate and called her to open and then I drove in. I knocked on the door and Nita opened for me.

Her: Hello Melo

Me: hey Nita, how are you?

Her: I'm good and how are you?

Me: also good, where is this girl?

Her: in her room or Ledi's I don't know

Me: ok thanks, smell's good, what are you cooking?

Her: Mac and Tuna

Me: what is it that's smelling this good?

Her: it's the tuna. Come see

She opened the pot for me and she was right, it was the tuna and it had peppers in it and other

things. She closed it

Me: looks good. Let me go to this one ey

Her: sure

I walked up to Yandi's room and knocked

"come in" She said from the other side of the door. I opened and she was wearing a robe

Me: seriously?

Her: I just finished showering when you called

Me: you know you could have showered at my place

I said pulling her close to me by her waist

Her: I know but I prefer mine anyway

I kissed her

"geeez get a room"

We both broke the kiss and Ledi was standing by the door

Me: we in it idiot. Ever heard of knocking?

Her: I'll knock when I stop paying the bills in this house. Friend I need your laptop

Yaya: in the drawer at the bottom

Ledi: thank you. Don't do anything I wouldn't do

She said giggling while walking out.

Me: Ledi really needs to learn how to knock.
What if we were having sex?

Her: then she would see your tiny D*

She said laughing, I squeezed her ass

Me: we both know that isn't true. If it was you wouldn't stare the way you do when I'm naked

Her: I'm normally admiring the packs that's all

Me: right... sure you are. Get dressed and lets go

Her: fine daddy

I let her go and spanked her ass while she walked to her closet to go get dressed. She came out wearing low-cut black jeans, black

tight vest showing off her perfect figure and waist and white Adidas sneakers.

Me: you look cute

Her: really?

Me: no not really. Wear a jacket on top it's a bit chilly outside

Her: you are incapable of giving a compliment

Me: you don't need one. You always look beautiful and if I complimented you on a daily, I'd run out of compliments

She blushed. And went to wear a nude cardigan and came back with an overnight bag and handed it to me

Her: thank you

Me: whatever. Aren't you spending the afternoon at my place tomorrow?

Her: so that your stalkers can each have a go at me? No thank you I'm good

I chuckled

Me: and then Miss Sassy pants? What's with the attitude?

Her: let's just go already

She said pulling my arm to Ledi's room and like Ledi she didn't knock, she just opened and walked in

Yaya: honey I'm gone, see you tomorrow

Her: have fun.

She said fixated on the screen in front of her, we walked out and headed down. we got to the car and I unlocked the doors so she could get in and we drove to my place. I opened the door and we walked in switching the lights on, it was after 6 anyway.

Me: should we cook or order?

I said going up the stairs to put her bag and mine

Her: I'll cook something while you shower ok?

Me: ok babe.

I took my clothes off and took a nice refreshing shower and then when I was done I wore boxers and went down to Yaya, I hugged her from behind and kissed her neck.

Me: what are you making?

Her: boloroni, something quick. Please grate the cheese for me

Me: and you couldn't ask me to stir or something... anything but grate

Her: nope, grating is fine for you

I started grating and told her about my day, leaving out the part where I saw her dad and she told me about hers and the stunt Lathitha pulled.

Me: I'm sorry

Her: its ok. I can handle her

Me: and you handled her good

When I was done she spread the cheese over the boloroni and insert it in the oven then we went to chill in the lounge to watch tv. I was laying on top of her while she played with my hair. There was a knock on the door in the middle of our chat

Me: who wants what now?!

Her: it's your place, go check

I got up to go answer the door and before me was Asemahle.

Her: hey brother

Me: really? At this time Asemahle

Her: aren't you going to invite me in?

Me: no! what do you want?

Her: whoever this girl you hiding is, she better be worth it

Me: I will call you tomorrow ok?

Her: fine

She said rolling her eyes at me. With that she turned around and walked away. I know I'm rude or mean or whatever but she and the rest of the family will know about Yaya when the time is right. for now, they must chill. I went back to Yaya and told her it was my twin. Later that night we ate and washed the dishes together and then went to my room where she gave me the BEST massage ever. Well it was my first ever and it was amazing, if this was what it was like having a girlfriend then I want to keep her, I plan to keep her for good! After my massage I went down on her and then we cuddled and fell asleep. Life was AMAZING now that Yaya was mine!

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES

LOVE*

.

.

33 - 18S

I woke up with Melo's arms tightly wrapped around me. I watched him look all sorts of HOT with his parted lips and his perfectly shaped lashes, yes he had beautiful long lashes. Even in his sleep he was possessive of me, it was too cute if you ask me.

"quit staring... its creepy"

He said murmuring in his super sexy sleepy voice

Me: I can't help it

Him: gimme a kiss

He said pouting. My word this man was dreamy in all levels!

Me: eeeuw you haven't even brushed your teeth

Him: I didn't say stick your tongue in my mouth.
I just said give me a kiss, pouting by the way
I clicked my tongue

Me: you never take a break huh?

Him: from?

Me: being silly. You always ready with a come
back

Him: when dating you I have to be prepared for
anything... am I getting this kiss or not?

I attempted to turn but he just held me tighter
refraining me from giving him my back

Me: let go of me

Him: don't tell me you mad?

Me: nope, but let go of me

Him: you so cute when you pouting

He said with a smirk on his face, I couldn't help
but blush. He did everything effortlessly, simple
meaningless words coming from his mouth

made me blush, how did he do it? it's not rocket science that's for sure. What was it about Melokuhle that gave me butterflies in my stomach?

Me: shut up

Him: look at you blushing. Even if I said screw you, you'd still blush

Me: don't try me Melokuhle Bess!

Him: you don't listen huh?!

I shook my head with a smirk. He flipped us over and he was on top of me, I could literally feel his erect D against my pelvic bone.

Him: you feel that?

Me: nope. What is it?

Him: that's paradise.

I cracked up in laughter

Me: you call your D*ck paradise?

I said still laughing

Him: no! but to you it will be the day you get a taste of it

Me: I wouldn't count on it

Him: don't test me Yandiswa

I was about to respond when he started kissing me, his kiss did things to me no human should be allowed to do. I mean a kiss like that had to be illegal. I was wet just from his kiss. We kissed for a while and then he went down to my neck

Him: still don't want to kiss me

Me: shut up and just do your thing

I was so horny it's not even funny. I can't remember the last time I ever had sex! He chuckled and continued kissing me then he took my t-shirt-well his t-shirt- off of me and then he went on to suck on my boobs. Each kiss made me crave him, it made me want him more and more but Melokuhle was patient, he was

taking his sweet precious time with me. I kept letting out slight moans here and there, he went on down to my stomach and finally reached my very wet lace panties. He chuckled

Him: somebody seems ready

I flushed. The look in his eyes, that hunger they portrayed only made me want him throbbing deep inside of me. He took my panties off slowly then threw them somewhere in the room. He went on to stick one finger and I flinched-it's been months ok?!- he sucked on my clit while rubbing it with his thumb and his index finger going in and out. I could feel my orgasm build up, my toes curling while I clanged onto the sheets biting my lower lip.

Me: M-E-L-O

I screamed his name as I orgasmed, he came up and kissed me. I grabbed on his hair while kissing him back, I wanted him inside of me but he wasn't budging at all. Typical Melokuhle. He

broke the kiss and smiled

Him: I'm going to be late for work, come let's go and shower

I looked at him with that "are you serious?" look but he wasn't fazed at all.

Me: what?

Him: its fine I'll go shower alone and then you can come drop the key at work or I'll fetch it when I come fetch you... it's really up to you

He got off me. Melokuhle just made me cum but he wasn't doing anything about it? what is wrong with this guy? He didn't even wait for my response, he walked to his bathroom and left me there on his king size bed lost for words. I decided to get up because clearly he meant business. I headed to the bathroom and he was standing by the sink brushing his teeth, I took my toothbrush and joined him. I was naked and he was still in his boxers. When he was done, he took them off and went inside the shower and

turned the tap on, when I was finished I got inside to join him. he can't just tease me with his D and leave me hanging. Its mean if you ask me! I hugged him from behind

Him: what about your hair?

Me: what about it?

Him: wont it shrink or something?

Me: I don't care

I just nodded and didn't say anything. My hands made their way down to his D while he washed, he wasn't paying any attention to me. he didn't even turn to look at me, I could feel his D or should I say "paradise" get hard by the second as I played with it

Him: don't start something you won't finish
Yandiswa

Me: who said I won't finish it?

I kept stroking him and he turned around with that look of hunger.

Him: you are playing with fire

Me: no, I'm playing with paradise

Him: you sure you want to do this?

Me: what do you mean am I sure? You can't just tease me Melokuhle and not give me this

I said with my hand still playing with it. I grabbed my ass and picked me up and pinned me against the shower tiles

Him: Yandiswa are you sure?

Me: yes, Melokuhle

He kissed me and tried to insert himself, I flinched

Him: I don't want to hurt you. I still need you able to walk in those heels tonight

He was serious. He was hard, but he wasn't giving me this D that every girl keeps coming back for.

Him: Yaya look at me

I was pouting, I wasn't happy at all.

Him: come on don't frown. When the time is right we will have lots of sex ok? so much that you will hate me

I was still pouting. He kissed me but I didn't respond

Him: I'm out of options. What do you want me to do?

Me: why won't you have sex with me

He put me down.

Him: what makes you think I don't want to have sex with you?

Me: because I am standing in front of you naked but you don't do anything about it, you go down on me almost every time I spend the night here but still nothing

Him: oral sex is still sex Yaya

I shook my head

Me: I don't just want oral Melokuhle

Him: you think I don't want to have sex with you? Yandiswa I've been wanting to have sex with you from the minute I walked in on you naked in your room on the 16th of November.

Me: then why haven't we had any sex, we've been dating for two weeks' now

Him: exactly, we've only been dating for two weeks and I don't want to rush you into anything. I love you Yandiswa and I don't want us to have those relationships where its only about sex and nothing else. You not a random girl Yandiswa and I don't want to treat you like one. That pussy is special and it deserves to be treated like a queen

I couldn't help but blush. Only Melokuhle would complement a vagina.

Him: there's that smile I love so much. I hate seeing you frown

Me: ok I won't frown

Him: you promise?

Me: I promise

Him: pinkie swear

He said holding up his pinkie finger and I locked mine into his and then we broke it. he planted a kiss on my lips leaving me smiling like an idiot.

Him: so what will you be doing today?

Me: I don't know really, Ledi and I will probably go shopping for the perfect gift for you

Him: I already have the perfect gift and she's standing right in front of me

I giggled like a 5-year-old.

Me: quit it. stop making me feel all sorts of way

Him: you my girl. you suppose to feel all sorts of ways

Me: let's get out here before you get in trouble for being late

Him: I'm the boss's son

Me: still doesn't give you the right

Him: fine. Let's get out then

We got out of the shower and he took a big towel and wiped me then he wiped himself and we both walked out of the room naked. I was completely free around Melokuhle; he did see my body even before we started dating now. I took his phone and took some selfies on his nice mirror on the wall and he came to stand right behind me and made me take some more.

Me: you are going to be late

Him: then put something on and stop distracting me

I rolled my eyes and went to wrap a towel around my body while he went to search for briefs to wear. I couldn't resist taking pictures of him, he had a hot body and I was a photographer so it was only fitting that I take

pictures

Him: stop taking pictures of me

Me: you going to love them when I'm done with them I swear

Him: they better stay hidden

Me: but I need some of them for my portfolio

Him: I'm not appearing naked on your portfolio

Me: of cause you won't be naked, you're wearing briefs and the pictures won't be that clear you know

Him: I want to see them first

Me: fine... relax would you!

He shook his head and went in his closet to search for something to wear, I decided to head down to make us cereals and then I went up with the bowls to his room. He hates bringing bowls up to his room but he's come to live with it because I don't listen. I put the bowels on the

small table in the middle of his room and then made the bed, when I was done I lotioned my body, he walked in dressed in a grey perfectly fitted suit with a dark grey tie and a white shirt. I was literally drooling over him.

Him: you drooling

I closed my mouth.

Me: what do you expect when you look like this?!

Him: it's not for you Missy!

Me: then who is it for? Patricia

I said trying to spite him but he didn't give me a chance, he flatly ignored me and spoke of something else while I finished up and got dressed I a loosely hanging pink dress and a sandal.

Him: mom said if I bumped into you I should invite you over for dinner

Me: but I'm already going with you. How's this going to work out?

Him: leave that to me

He said with his face not giving away anything. He was sitting on an ottoman in his room eating our favourite cereal, I went to sit on the other one and ate mine. When we were both done I packed up my things while he went to wash our dishes. Yes, I don't leave anything in his place, not even a toothbrush or an earring. When I was done I headed down with all his things and I found him talking on the phone.

Him: stay away from her!

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:23] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

34-Melo

Yaya sulking over sex is very cute if you ask me. It's not that I don't want to have any with her just yet but dad told me to slow things down with this one if I want to keep her, I asked him for advice this one time and he once told me that some girls are worth the wait and Yaya is worth the wait. I don't want to force this whole thing, yes I crave her but I want to do things right. What Lathitha did was childish! Yes, I called her and she is the one I was talking to over the phone.

"Ready to go?"

Said Yaya with the most adorable tone and a smile standing by the bottom of the stairs.

Me: yeah, let's go

I went to take the things from her hand and then she locked up and we walked down to my car.

Her: what time are you coming out today?

Me: it's a half-day actually. I'll be out at 2pm and then you are going to come help me pick an outfit

Her: but you dress up nicely all on your own

Me: I know but I want to see if you can dress your man up...

I said rubbing her hand

Her: uhhhm.... We'll see

Me: that is not convincing at all... should I be worried?

Her: yeah you should

She said laughing

Me: I have a lot I need to teach you!

We got to her place and I stopped right outside, I wasn't late for work or anything like that.

Me: be ready when I get out of work

Her: as in be dressed for the occasion or to go to your place

Me: you know what I mean. I'll call you when I leave the office so that you dressed when I get here

Her: fine

She said rolling her eyes.

Her: see you later then

She kissed my cheek and attempted opening the car but it was locked, I can't help but feel like something was bothering her. I know I don't know her that well but I think I would know when something was bothering mine.

Me: is everything ok?

Her: yes, why?

Me: you seem a bit quiet and that's unlike you

Her: nothing's bothering me. you going to be late for work

Me: I rather be late for work then. Tell me what's bothering you? Is it still the sex thing?

She shook her head.

Me: then what is it?

Her: I heard you talking on the phone earlier

Of cause. Why am I not surprised?

Me: how much did you hear?

Her: you telling whoever to stay away from
whoever

I chuckled. She pouted, this one was definitely
like my mom. she just doesn't like being kept in
the dark.

Me: I was talking to Lathitha. I don't like what
she did, she was a one-night stand and that's as
far as it goes. She had no right to confront you

Her: this is my life now Melokuhle. These are
the kinds of people I'll probably be dealing with
at times

Me: people you don't have to deal with
Yandiswa. You didn't sign up for some girl

drama, you just got into a relationship with me.

Her: getting into a relationship with you comes with these perks Melokuhle

Me: no it doesn't. look none of my flings have ever bothered anyone I'm with or they see me with because they understood what they were getting into. Lathitha is messed up, I don't know what her problem is but I will handle her. the last thing I need is you having to fight off these girls I had flings with. it's not fair on you.

She nodded. I put my hand behind her neck and pulled her in for a kiss, she responded to it. she broke it after a while

Her: you going to be late

Me: but are we good thou?

She smiled and nodded, her smile seemed genuine making me smile too.

Her: Melokuhle I love you and I am willing to fight off all these girls if I have to just as long as

I'm with you

Did she just tell me she loves me??? Am I hearing things or did Yandiswa Gxaba just say she loves me? I smiled and looked at her

Her: why are you looking at me like that?

Me: you just said you love me for the first time

Her: your point?

Me: really? You really don't know how to stay in the moment do you?

Her: like you, I have a thing for ruining the perfect moment

Me: I don't ruin such cute romantic moments. You are the worst Mafaku!

She smiled

Me: why are you smiling?

Her: you called me by my clan name

She said with the widest smile. What is it with you girls and being called by your clan name?

what's so exciting about the whole thing? I am so confused by really.

Me: uhhhm I won't even get into detail with you on this. Bye baby, I'll see you after work.

I kissed her on the lips and then unlocked the door

Her: enjoy your day

Me: you too

She got off and I drove off to work. Turns dad's meetings have been outside of the office the whole of today which meant I would only be seeing this evening. I got a visit from my twin.

Her: hello Melo

Me: hey twinny, how are you?

Her: who was the girl you were with last night?

Me: man I'm good too thanks

Her: oh please don't play with me. who is she?

Me: I don't know what or who you talking about

Her: is it Kate?

Me: I told you she dumped me

Her: then who is she? Just give me a name and a surname or any detail I can use

Me: use for what?

Her: Facebook

Me: all you need to know is that she is beautiful with the word beautiful in bold and in capital letters by the way

Her: do I know her?

Me: where's the fun in telling you?

Her: come on Melo please

Me: so when are you getting a boyfriend?

Her: so you really not going to tell me anything about her?

I shook my head with a smirk, I know that me smirking would only annoy her and it worked

Her: fine! I don't have a boyfriend and I don't want one

Me: why?

Her: you yourself told me never to date these boys, they might just be like you

I couldn't help but laugh at that.

Me: ouch! and here I am trying to change for the better

Her: this girl is working miracles I swear. Even God was unable to work these kinds of miracles on you Melo

Me: what can I say, love changes people

Her: did you just say "love"?

She said quoting the word in air quotes

Me: whatever

Her: I'm proud actually. Despite everything but I'm glad you finally have a girl you love and seems to love you back judging by how happy

you are lately. I'm really happy for you brother and I hope you guys treat each other well and my word I PRAY that you guys stay together. Don't mess this up, I don't care who pisses you off or says what just don't mess this one up
Melo

Me: geeez, you make it sound like I'm some sort of screw up

Her: relationship-wise you are but I'm giving you the benefit of the doubt with this one.

I nodded. She really was proud of me and happy for me which meant I was doing good and with the way Yaya was, I think it's safe to say I had this whole relationship thing figured out after all and I was performing well at it. We continued to talk for a while and then I accompanied her to her car. Yes, the parents had given her all of her keys and she was back to being independent again.

.

.
****Later after work****

I left work later than I should have, BESS decided to throw me a surprise pre-party. After the party at work I went to go and fetch Yaya at her place and then we drove off to mine. We got to my place and both took a shower then we changed into our outfits for the family and friends thing held at the mansion. She was wearing a black knee length open dress that had something like a choker-it's actually prettier than it sounds- with a pair of red heels. I wore a black fitted suit with a red bowtie and black red bottom formal shoes. I had just finished tying my shoe laces when she walked out of the bathroom with her clean make up and her hair tied up in a knit bun at the top of her head. I looked at her from head to toe, I was literally drooling over how good she looked.

Her: uhhm how do I look?

I could see her lips moving but my mind was on how hot she looked, my cousin was going to hit on her no doubt. If not him then my friends, well business associates were going to hit on her all night. I had to do something about how STUNNING she looked.

Her: Melo?

Me: yes, babe?

Her: how do I look?

Her camera was sitting on the bed next to me. she has taught me a thing or two about taking the perfect picture. She was standing in front of the mirror admiring how good she looked. And dare I say she was perfection!

Me: you look beautiful

The words just slipped right out of my mouth. I took her camera and took pictures of her, she started posing for me as I showered her with compliments left right and centre.

Her: come, your turn now

Me: use my phone

Her: after I take a few with my camera

There was no fighting with her, I always let her win anyway. I let her take the pictures and she made me pose every now and then, it was tiring but I did it anyway complaining every 2 seconds.

Me: we going to be late

Her: you the guest of honour, you and your twin so you allowed to be

I chuckled and flashed her a smile which she captured. She took a few shorts with my phone and then we took a few more together before leaving the flat. It was 10 to 6 already. I drove off to my parent's place. I got in the yard and parked my car, the street was packed with nice cars which meant this wasn't an intimate gathering. Trust Mrs Bess to go all out. I got out of the car and went to open her door for her

then put my arm up for her to hook her arm into mine

Her: what about your mom?

Me: what about her?

She looked at me confused. We walked in and greeted a few business associates and then I went to find my parents but bumped into Iya on my way.

Her: Hey handsome

She said hugging me making me let go of Yaya

Me: hello sister.

I broke the hug

Me: how are you?

She responded looking at the ever so beautiful Yaya next to me.

Her: I'm good. Yaya you look BEAUTIFUL! How are you?

Yaya: thank you, I'm good thanks and how are

you? You look just as beautiful by the way

Her: thanks.

Me: any idea where the parents are?

Iya: they by pool mingling. Why?

I just looked at her and took Yaya's hand into mine and left Iya standing there. We walked out to the pool and spotted them talking to Linda's mom.

Me: mom, dad, Mrs Mbira

Mom: hey baby, hey Yandi

Mrs Mbira: hey Derrick

They both kissed me on the cheek, then both greeted Yandiswa

Dad: son, Yandiswa

We both shook his hand.

Me: mom, dad and Mrs Mbira meet my girlfriend Yandiswa Gxaba

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

35 - #Unedited

A normal girlfriend would be excited to be introduced to the parents but not Yandiswa Gxaba. I wasn't fazed, the intro was a little too soon. Couldn't he have been a little bit patient? I was stunned if you ask me, I really didn't expect that to happen. Its only been two weeks!

Ama: so you the reason he hasn't been sleeping home lately

I faked a shy smile. This was overwhelming for me. Melo should not have done that, a little

warning would have been much appreciated.

Dad: I'm glad he finally came to his sense

Him: geez dad

Mrs Mbira: she's a wonderful girl this one, keep her

Him: I plan to do nothing less. Uhhm guys may we please be excused

Mom: I'm glad you two are a thing by the way

She said with that charming smile, I returned a cold one. He really took me by surprise. We walked inside the house and we bumped into Ase

Ase: and where are you two off to hand in hand?

She asked with that smile of hers that says a lot.

Him: we will be back in 5 minutes Mel

Her: uhhm ok

I just smiled at her and walked behind Melo to where I am assuming was his room, we walked

up the stairs and headed to the second room and by the looks of things I was right, we were in his room.

Him: I know you mad. But Yandiswa I had too, I couldn't keep pretending anymore

I looked at him tempted to slap him but also tempted to pin him on the door and kiss him. its cute but its scary because its bad enough that his mom adores me and now this? really? That woman is a sweetheart, but this is too much.

Him: please say something. yell at me or slap me or something. just anything

I looked at him for some time.

Me: a little heads up maybe?

Him: I know you don't believe me but I didn't plan this, I wasn't planning what I did out there, it just happened ok? and I am sorry

Me: its not that I hate what you did but Melo I wasn't ready, we've only been together for 2

weeks

Him: so? Yandiswa do you not believe in us?

Me: what?

Him: you keep reminding me that we've only been together for two weeks as if you have other plans

Me: I don't have other plans Melo, you yourself said you wanted to take things slow and that's how I would like things to be. Slow

Him: so what exactly are you saying Yandiswa because I am so confused right now

Me: the last thing I wanted was to argue with you Melo. Whats done is done already, next time please just keep things at a reasonable pace

He nodded, his nod wasn't as assuring though it was almost as if he was scared or worried about something. I cupped his face and looked deep into his eyes

Me: look introducing me wont make stay, waiting for months to have sex wont make me stay either. My point is I am with you because I want to be with you and not because of everything you not. I love you Melokuhle for who you are and not who you try to be. I understand that you want to do things differently with me but somethings wont work as you wish they would ok?

He nodded. I pulled his face into mine and kissed his cute lips and he looked at me and smiled.

Him: I hear you. You said something about not having to wait

He said grabbing my ass

Me: hey people are waiting on you

Him: let them wait

He said rolling my dress up and picking me up, I couldn't help but giggle as he led me to his bed

Me: the door

I said in between the kiss but Melo wasn't hearing me. I pulled away from the kiss and he looked at me almost annoyed and he got off and went to close the door. Yes we were going to have sex under his parents roof. He came back and he kissed me passionately while taking my dress off gently as possible, the way he touched me was as if he was handling a delicate flower. Each kiss sent chills down my spine and each touch did things to me. I still don't know how he did it but DAMN! He went on to take my underwear off and then went on to take my bra off and then stuck his finger in and out while kissing me. When he was done and he was sure that I was wet enough he took out a condom and slipped it on then tried inserting himself but to no luck, he looked at me

Him: should I stop?

I shook my head

He tried again but still nothing, he took the condom off and tried inserting himself again, it was so painful he wanted to stop but I was not having that. I've been wanting this man for a every long time now and I was finally getting him, my cookie needed to stop acting like a brat! I was the persistent one more than he was, eventually he succeeded and dare I say I screamed as he went in, luckily his lips were smashed into mine to refrain me from making noise. What started off painful ended up in pleasure, I came before he pulled out, he took a towel and wiped us both clean. He came back and laid beside me while resting his head on his hand and watching me. he smiled at me played with my well shaped eyebrows. He chuckled.

Me: what?

Him: nothing

He said with a smile.

Me: what?

Him: i didn't think you had it in you

Me: what are you talking about?

He got up and started getting dressed. You know Melo is about to say something silly when he keeps laughing and not really saying what he's thinking of saying really. He was already standing by the bathroom door.

Him: you went from key hole to the great hole of Kimberly

I had no response, he was in stitches of laughter and so was I, how did he come up with these bombs? Melokuhle was going straight to hell no detour or whatsoever! I don't think I have met anyone sillier than he was. This guy just kept dropping these bombs. I got up and looked for my underwear and then wore my dress, I had no response for Melokuhle. I was tired actually. He came back and he wore his suit and shoes, yes we got carried away; I fixed my hair into the way it was before Melo happened

and he fixed his. Melo really tore me up and it was only one round. When we were done getting dressed we walked out and headed downstairs. We met Ase on the way

Her: where did you guys disappear off to?

We looked at each other and smiled.

Ase: I take it we on good terms?

She asked with a smile, we looked at each other and nodded like little kids.

Him: now if you don't mind

Me: I love your dress by the way.

Her: thank you, I love yours. You yourself look amazing

Me: thank you, I had to make an impression

I said eyeing Melo

Him: uhhhm seemingly I'm not needed here.
See you around

He said kissing my cheek and then he walked

away from us

Her: ok what am I missing? You and Melo hated each others guts just last week and now he's kissing your cheek? Did the devil take a vacation or something?

I looked at her and laughed

Me: what? No! it was all an act, its been an act for the past two weeks

Her: huh?

Me: today he introduced me to your mom, dad and Mrs Mbira as his girlfriend

Her: wait so you the girl that was at his place yesterday or that night I went to see him?

I nodded with a smile. She looked at me with the widest smile

Her: so Iya was right all along?

I looked away with a smile

Her: you guys are so sly!

She playfully hit my shoulder and we both laughed

Me: I wanted to tell you but at the same time I didn't want to tell you just yet, I was waiting on your brother to share the news with you guys

Her: argh that one doesn't share

She said rolling her eyes

Me: well I wasn't ready, I still wasn't ready for today's introduction but it happened and theres nothing I could have done about it

I said shrugging

Her: that's my brother, full of surprises

Me: I'm starting to see that

Her: but are you happy with him?

Me: yes I am

I said with the most widest smile. I was happy with my man, this was like the relationship I've only ever wished for. This life I was living was

life I've only ever seen in movies or read about it in books. I was content.

Her: aaaah I'm so happy for you. I'm glad you happy with my brother, I'm not going to try and convince you of anything but I can see some change in him. You the change he's been needing in his life

She said smiling and I smiled back. I'm glad that I was changing Melo, scary but exciting too. We continued chatting and then we headed down, their father and mother made a speech and wished their children a "happy birthday" and then they cut some cake and people mingled. I was chilling with his sisters and Linda because they were the only people I knew oh and Linda's cousin sister. Linda's cousin sister and were in the kitchen pouring drinks for the other girls

Me: I never got your name

Her: its Sinothando Bashe, you are?

Me: Yandiswa Gxaba. Wait, Bashe?

I was confused.

Me: I don't mean to be forward but who is your father?

Her: Thando Bashe... why?

“what are you two look alike talking about?”

Melo said hugging me from behind and kissing my cheek. I looked at her and NO! we did not look alike, we may have a few resemblances but that's as far as it goes. Her Thando cant possibly be my Thando, we cant possibly share a father.

Us: we don't look alike

We said at the same time, Melo just laughed at us

Him: riiiiight... ready to leave?

Me: already?

Him: you still want to stay

I nodded

Him: 30 more minutes and we leave

Me: don't you like being home?

Him: I love being home, but I love being with you even more

He said kissing my cheek, Sino coughed signalling her presence in the room

Him: close your eyes wena

Her: whatever. I'll be outside

Me: WE will be outside

I said taking the other drinks and left him standing there and followed Sino

Me: please take my number, I feel like we need to talk

Her: uhhm when I get to my phone then

Me: great.

We got to the girls and gave them their drinks then we continued talking about some girl stuff. After 30 minutes on the dot Melo came and sat

on top of me

Iya: rub it in Melo

Him: aint my fault your ass is single

Me: and I didn't sign up for this, get up off me

Him: NOPE! I'll get up when you have said your goodbyes

I rolled my eyes and the girls laughed, instead of saving me they laughing at me... ouch! I said my goodbyes to them and the he got up as promised. We went to find his parents to say our goodbyes.

Mom: you guys are leaving already?

Him: yeah, she's tired mom she needs her beauty sleep

Dad: riiiiight. Anyway happy birthday again son and we will see you at breakfast

Him: breakfast?

Mom: yeah breakfast at 8am sharp

Him: huh? what?!

Dad: no getting out of this one

Him: fine

Mom: you too Yandiswa

I looked at her, I think shock was written all over my face

Her: don't look at me like that. We expect to see you too tomorrow

Me: yes Ma

She pulled me in for a hug and whispered "take care of him please" then she broke the hug and smiled making me smile right back at her. We said our goodbyes to his parents and then we walked out to his car and drove off to his place.

.

.

<3

Guys I am sorry this is only coming now, I only

got to my laptop today late and I had to wait for it to charge before I could type an insert. I am so drained, the next one will come tomorrow. I am sorry for the inconveniences.

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

36-Melo

We got to my place and we headed up with Yaya stripping her clothes off layer by layer as I walked behind her picking them up. Yaya is a clean person and I'm a neat freak, she likes to do things that will annoy me. like bringing food up to the room or leaving clothes lying around just to get to me or to make me talk. The things we do because of these girlfriends. We got to my room and she was already left with her bra and underwear with her hair untied-well she untied it the minute we got to the car-.

Her: can I get a massage before we sleep?

Me: that tired?

Her: heels are no child's play babe.

Me: I told you to go with the less high ones

Her: Naledi sort of warned me if I can put it that way

Me: warned you about what?

Her: she said what if you introduced me to your parents, I needed to make an everlasting appearance

I looked at her and just chuckled. Was she serious?

Me: my parents have met you before on a number of occasions Yaya

Her: yes, but not as your girlfriend

Me: right... I need a shower

I said taking my clothes off and we went to shower together. We had a steamy session

which we finished in the room. Sex with Yaya was AMAZING! How could I ever leave that? She was flexible too which was an extra plus. By the time we were done we were both breathing heavily and drained. I pulled her to my chest and kissed her forehead.

Her: you are a sex addict!

Me: says the person who was just on top of me

She hit me on my chest

Her: do you ever not have an answer?

Me: nope!

Her: of cause not. why am I even asking?!

She said yawning.

Me: lets sleep babe

She nodded and I pulled the blanket up over us and we fell asleep instantly. I woke up to someone playing with my face, if you know that thing babies do to their mom when she's

sleeping by putting their tiny hands all over the mom's face, well that's what Yandiswa was doing.

Her: wake up

I tried opening my eyes.

Me: how are you up this early?

I said opening my eyes yawning.

Her: there's breakfast with your parents at 8 so let's go shower

Me: what time is it?

I really didn't want to wake up but if I didn't, Mrs Bess was going to rock up at my place and... well you know how mothers can get.

Her: its quarter past 6. So let's go wash

Me: let me call her first, don't even know where we having this breakfast of hers

She handed me my phone on her side of the table, I dialled mom's number and it rang for a

while before she answered.

//Me: morning mom

Her: morning baby, how are you?

Me: good and yourself?

Her: I'm great.so... you and Yandiswa

Me: what about me and Yandiswa?

Yaya looked at me

Her: how long?

Me: two weeks ago when she was hospitalized

Her: and you only told us yesterday...

Me: it was unplanned mom plus you told me to bring my girlfriend

Her: I expected Kate or someone

Me: I told you Kate dumped me

Her: yeah but I thought you guys had patched things up... you know

Me: nah mom we didn't.

Her: I'm glad though. Yandiswa is a good child, she reminds me of myself when I was around her age

Me: all right. let's have this conversation some other time mom. we need to shower and go fetch her some clothes at her place

Her: sleep overs already? You guys move fast

Me: mom don't ok. please just don't

Her: what? I'm just saying. Melo

Me: mom

Her: treat that child well, she will take you places

Me: hahaha I'm already going places

Her: you think your father got to where he is now by himself?

Me: of cause not

Her: exactly. One day you'll remember this, me telling you to treat her right because at some

point in your life it will pay off

Me: thanks mom. so the real reason I called was to ask where we having this breakfast

Her: here at home

Me: really mom?

Her: yes. We having breakfast here at home

Me: yes, ma'am. Bye for now

Her: bye baby. Happy birthday

Me: yeah thanks, you too//

She laughed at me making me laugh too and we dropped the call. I never know what to say when someone says happy birthday to me, saying thanks feels like cheating and so I say you too to avoid any awkwardness. When I was done talking to mom we both got up to shower and then when we were done I wore shorts and a t-shirt with sneakers then she took her things and we both went to her place. I parked inside the yard and we went inside. We got to her room

and she went to her closet to pick out something

Her: will jeans be fine?

Me: have you seen the sun outside?

Her: I don't know what to wear

Me: just wear a summer dress. It's nothing formal chill, please no need for heels

Her: whatever!

She came out wearing a cute pink dress, it held her upper body too well and was open and loose from the waist down it wasn't short nor was it long. It was perfect. She wore it with a nice sandal

Her: how do I look?

Me: like a little princess

She clicked her tongue looking all kinds of adorable.

Her: whatever.

Me: let's go woman!

Her: ok, wait a second there's something I need to get first.

She walked back into her closet and she came back with a paper bag, she sat on top of me

Her: here you go. Happy birthday

I looked at her in disbelief. I told her I didn't want a present, especially one from her. the last thing I want is her going all out and spending her hard earned money, she's still a first year student for Christ sake!

Her: open it

I took it and looked inside and found a maroon box written Cartier in italics which meant it was expensive, whatever was inside had to have cost her a lot. I took the box out and she put the paper bag next to us. I opened it and it had a watch with my initials embedded on the belt of it and on the stainless steel part of the watch at

the back. I looked at her

Her: do you like it?

Me: I thought I told you no gifts

Her: can you just say thank you and scold me later

She said pouting making it impossible for me to even be mad at her.

Me: thank you baby

I said kissing her on the lips. She broke it

Her: happy birthday Melo

Me: thank you babe.

Her: ok. let's go now

She said attempting to get off of me but I didn't let her, my hands were supporting her ass as she sat on top of me

Her: we going to be late

Me: so?

I pulling her on top of me and then flipping us over so I was on top of her.

Me: a little quickie wouldn't hurt now would it

She giggled as I made my way down to her neck leaving trails of kisses

Her: it would actually, paradise comes at a cost

I stopped and looked at her and laughed. My ego went from a 10 to a 100. Nothing beats hearing that your D is huge, even if she didn't put in many words but that ish makes the Ego go up.

Me: you are something else.

I continued with what I started making her moan and call my name. we didn't make love, we f*cked, really good even. She came and I came right after her. she got up and went to the bathroom and followed her, we needed to get cleaned up before we left. When we were done with everything I asked her to help me put my

new watch on and then we left.

Me: remind me to pass by the pharmacy, we don't want you getting pregnant now

Her: my mom would kill me!

Me: and we don't want that. I still need you in my life

She smiled and brushed my hand over the gear. We got to the pharmacy and bought her the morning after pill, she drank it and then we left for my home. Breakfast with the family was nice, it was awesome as usual. Uncle Damien and his wife and their 10-year-old were back from the states. Mom and dad bought us cars, me a BMW i8 and Ase a red mini cooper; the latest. Ase loved mini coopers and I loved sports cars. Iya bought me a Rolex and the rest of the gifts were amazing as well. Our party was starting at 6pm and then later on we were hitting the club. Yaya and I left and headed to my place to drop these gifts off. When we were

done we went to watch movies and of cause we argued about what we were going to watch and who was paying.

Her: it's your birthday. You can't be paying.

Me: we not arguing over this Yandiswa!

I said giving the lady my card

Yaya: sisi please take mine

She said giving the lady her card. The lady looked at both of us and laughed

Her: you guys are so cute, how long have you been together?

Yaya looked at me expecting me respond.

Me: a very long time. thanks for the compliment.

She gave me the speed point to insert my pin and it said it was incorrect, when I looked at the card it was Yaya's

Me: really Yandiswa?

She smiled and nodded taking the speed point

from my hand to input her pin

Me: you win; can I have my bank card?

Her: later ok

She said kissing my cheek. The lady gave us our tickets and popcorn with slushies and then we went to watch this movie of hers. It was not so bad I guess. When we were done we went shopping and from there on we headed to my place. It was only then that she gave me my card.

Me: never do that again

Her: try make me

Me: don't test me Yandiswa

Her: you so cute when you try and act mad at me

I clicked my tongue. I took my shoes off and got on top of the bed laying with my stomach, I was tired. The time was a little after 4pm. I felt her sit on top of my ass and lie on top of me.

Her: Melo

Me: mhm

Her: are you mad at me?

Me: nope, why would I?

Her: because I kept your card

Me: ncooooh, I'm not mad at you ok

Her: ok

She sounded so cute, like a kid even. I don't know when or how I fell asleep but I was woken up by Yaya.

Her: we going to be late... again

Me: can't we cancel? I'm tired

Her: and have Asemahle on my case blaming me? no thank you!

I got up and dragged my feet to the bathroom to freshen up. When I was done I got back to the room and she was wearing a sexy black and white bikini top with a high waist bikini bottom,

she looked chowable. I stood there and admired her from behind as she looked at herself in the mirror. These boys were going to want some of that no doubt.

Me: tell me you wearing a beach cloth over that

Her: why?

Me: I'm not going anywhere with you dressed like that Yandiswa. These boys will be perving over you!

She turned around and smiled.

Her: so what if they perve? I'll be with you throughout

She came and stood in front of me, she was wearing a white with black stripes wedge. She cupped my face.

Her: they can perve all they want, you the only one whose attention I'm after

Me: and you got it

Her: I'd like to keep it that way too.

I just looked at her and let her be. I pecked her lips and went to get dressed and packed up a bag, I wasn't planning on starting here first.

Me: better pack up the things you going to wear at the club, we only going to come here to sleep.

Her: yes, daddy

She said rolling her eyes. today was going to be a day to remember. no more random sex on my birthday :0

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

37

We drove off to the harbour where we would be meeting everyone and the boat. I must say there weren't as many people as I had expected to rock up. Maybe they were still coming or we were meeting them at the club, I don't know. He switched off the engine.

Him: we here

Me: you don't sound so excited

Him: there's nothing wow about this really, all of this is my sister's thing

Me: what did you want?

Him: the club

Me: and we going there later on. Cheer up

Him: my concern is you actually

Me: Me? why?

Him: some of the girls I've had flings with before who are friends with Asemahle are going to be here tonight and at the club

Me: I'm a big girl, I can take care of myself

I said rubbing his hand over the gear but he was still unassured.

Him: they are going to do things or say things that might make you hate me

Me: nothing they say or do could ever make me hate you Melokuhle

I touched his face and made him look at me, this whole time he was looking down.

Me: I love you Melokuhle and I don't care how many random chicks I cross paths with. they are your past and I am your present

Him: I think you mean future

He said with a smile forming on his cute lips.

Me: future?

Him: forget I said anything. Come let's go have some fun and if any boy dare tries their luck on you Yandiswa I won't hesitate

Me: I know

I said rolling my eyes. This is the same guy who punched someone for insulting me at the club so I don't doubt that one single bit. He planted a kiss on my lips before unlocking the doors. We got out and the air from the beach was not so cold, it was actually cool. We went in on the boat and he led me to this room down the stairs to put our bags and for when I get tired of the crowd... those type of things. We walked out and he showed me around the boat, a while later people got on and it was time to party. I was wearing a wedge that matched my bikini and he was wearing shorts and a t-shirt with a sandal. We went to chill by the pool where our friends were sitting, this boat was bigger than it looked.

Ase: the power couple finally decides to join us
I was sitting on top of his lap while the rest sat on their chairs.

Melo: shut up.

Luc: so you the reason he's been a good boy lately

Me: what did I do?

Melo: don't start. Don't mind him babe

He said kissing my cheek

Luc: well my cousin over here has lost his game. He doesn't look in another girl's direction, he can't even compliment another girl and right now he has a girl on his lap and not somewhere making out. What have you done to him?

I looked at Melo expecting him to respond. I mean I don't recall telling him to do what Luc says he's been doing lately.

Melo: at some point you get tired... but I wouldn't expect you to understand

Siya: be a bit more specific please

Melo: you get tired of the random hook ups and

everything they come with. you got to grow up
at some point

I looked at him and smiled. He has really grown

Ase: look at you blushing. Come let's go dance

Me: we'll go when I'm a little tipsy

I said sipping on my drink. I was drinking
hunter's gold and Ase was drinking a cocktail
while Ledi was drinking hunters dry.

Ledi: she has a boyfriend now; chances are she
won't even get tipsy. Let's leave her

Me: really Ledi

Ledi: yep. Come Mahle lets go have fun

She said pulling Mahle's hand to go and dance

Melo: you sure you don't want to go?

He said in my ear.

Me: I want to have a few drinks before I can let
go

Him: don't let go too much ok

Me: yes, daddy

I said rolling my eyes. Just then my stoner friends from school came to our table with weed... just what I've been wanting. I couldn't hide my excitement.

Siya: you such a stoner. Just seeing an ocurpipe excites your ass.

Me: what can I say, it's the best thing since sliced bread

I could feel Melo's eyes pierce through my skin, I didn't even want to look at him. I quickly got off of him and when to sit on the chair next to his.

Sihle: and this is why we get along

He said lighting it up with my help of cause. I'll pick weed over alcohol any day! Bae didn't look like he was a stoner. Judging by his face, it's safe to say he was not a fan at all. We started

puffing while chatting about random things. I offered Melo some but he said no so I gave the pipe to Siya.

Me: why do you hate weed?

Him: who said I hate weed?

Me: you the only one not smoking it

Him: the last thing I want to do is to get high with my girlfriend

Me: if you don't get high with me, then who do you plan to get high with?

Him: the guys. It just feels weird Yandiswa

Me: o...k

I puffed some more and blew it into Melo's face, I just wanted to annoy him. the guys laughed

Siya: you lucky you his girlfriend otherwise he would have reacted differently to that

Me: what would you have done if it were somebody else?

Him: nothing, he's just fooling around

A girl came to our table and sat on top of Melo's lap... so this is what he was talking about huh?!

Her: long time no see Melo

Melo: get off of me Celeste. Can't you see my girlfriend sitting next to me?!

He said pushing her off of him but missy wasn't having any of that

Siya: celeste leave.

Her: oh come on, we all know Melo is incapable of dating. She's a fling like all of them

I looked at this girl and chuckled. She tried to squeeze herself between Melo and I and I let her be. I'm too high to be arguing with some low life bitch anyway.

Melo: Celeste don't test me. leave!

He roared, startling me and her. I think it's the

weed that got me startled like that.

Her: what happened to you?

Him: I met someone, you should try it. now if you don't mind

The girl got up and looked at him in shock, he slid right next to me. she walked away with her tail between her legs. I felt sorry for her really.

Me: you didn't have to be rude

Him: no, she didn't have to do what she did.

Sihle: what just happened?

Luc: Melo just sent away free pussy. See what I mean, Yaya you changed the guy

I just shrugged and smoked some weed.

Melo: for my girlfriend you pretty calm

Tom: it's the weed. If she wasn't high she would have gone all ratchet on the poor girl

Siya: hahaha be glad she's this chilled ey. Ledi's attitude may have rubbed off on her

Me: ha ha ha very funny. I'm going to dance with the girls.

I got up and kissed Melo who pulled me to his lap and "smooched" me in front of his friends

Luc: still here guys

Siya: fry us we are your eggs

I couldn't help but laugh at that. He comes up with the most weirdest things. Melo looked at me in my eyes and then he smiled. His look was intimidating, almost like the first time I met him at my party.

Me: what?

Him: if anyone touches you, it'll be their funeral

He said with a straight face

Me: don't worry.

He let go of me and I went to the girls, we were dancing together and just being girls having harmless fun. As we were busy dancing like

that someone yanked Ase's arm roughly

Ledi: the hell is your problem

Him: I'm dancing with her

Ase: Khaya let go of me you hurting me

Him: come on Mahle don't be like that

Me: she said let her go dude, if you know what's good for you

This Khaya guy seemed familiar, he probably attended the same campus as us.

Him: I just want to dance with my classmate. Is that so wrong?

Ledi slapped him.

Ledi: she doesn't want to dance with you now leave.

"is there a problem here?"

Melo was behind me, his bold voice, his cologne, they gave him away. When did he even get here? Oh right, from where we were dancing you can

actually spot us from the table we were sitting in.

Me: everything is fine babe

Him: Asemahle are you ok?

She was rubbing her wrist.

Ase: yeah I'm fine

Khaya: come on Ase, just one dance

Melo: did this guy hurt you?

He said grabbing his sisters hand and she was pink on her wrist -Here comes trouble-. Yellow bones bruise easily.

Melo: what happened to your arm? Did he do this?

Ase: Melo I'm fine, no need to cause a scene.
Khaya leave.

She looked at me with pleading eyes. I turned to Melo and cupped his face to look at me, Asemahle and I both know what Melo is

capable of and we also know that this party would come to an end now if we don't get Melo in check.

Me: Mahle is fine ok, it was a little misunderstanding babe

Him: my sister's wrist is pink, where's the misunderstanding in that Yandiswa

He raised his voice at me and I just looked at him.

Ase: Melo I'm fine, he's my classmate and he's a little drunk ok. let it go

I still didn't understand why he would shout at me. I am not the one who bruised his sister mos. I went back to the table while they sort out whatever. I sat down and poured myself a glass of Jameson and downed it down at one go, all the guys were looking at me.

Luc: is everything ok?

I nodded. The Jameson was working wonders

on my throat, it was burning.

Siya: what did Melo do?

I poured myself a shot of vodka and now I was more calm. Melo came to sit next to me and took my hand but I pulled it away from him.

Siya: what did you do?

Melo: nothing. Yaya I'm sorry

He said looking at me.... he continued "I didn't mean to snap at you" I didn't respond. I just poured myself another glass of Jameson and this time I didn't drink it like a shot, this thing was strong. How did people drink this?

Him: Yaya please

Me: this is the same thing you did to me when we first met, you snapped at me. I didn't invite Khaya over, I didn't ask him to yank your sisters arm Melokuhle, it was not me.

Him: I'm sorry kaloku Yaya

He attempted to touch me

Me: don't touch me Melokuhle

I wasn't shouting or causing a scene for any of us, our friends couldn't even hear what I was saying. It's good that he would protect his sister but it shouldn't come at my expense, I shouldn't have to be the one to pay for whatever happens to her now. selfish as that may sound but it's true.

Me: I only stepped in because your sister asked me to Melokuhle

Him: xolo kaloku Yaya (I'm really sorry Yaya)

He looked so cute pleading, how could I stay mad huh? he was so sincere and so adorable. I kept trying to be mad but I couldn't. I think I was drunk too now. he took my glass from my hand and he came and stood in front of me and pulled me up... yep I was drunk because I stumbled on him.

Him: aren't you the cutest

Me: shut up

Him: come lets go

Me: at least let me finish my glass

Him: nope. Let's go. Guys we'll meet you at the club

With that we walked around the crowd and made it to the room he had showed me when we entered the boat. I went to pee first and then changed my bikini into my super sexy lingerie. I was drunk but I was able to be steady and go through with my plan for tonight. I loosened up my hair and put on some dark red lipstick, wore red heels and wore black lingerie. I looked sexy even if I say so myself, I was going to be his Beyoncé tonight! I got out of the bathroom where my phone was connected to some speakers playing Dance For You by Beyoncé and stood by the door making a sexy pose. His jaw dropped, I must say I was impressed with

myself. He was sitting on the edge of the bed watching me. he smiled and shook his head.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

38 – Melo

Wasn't she just mad at me a few minutes ago and drunk too? this girl never ceases to amaze me. I was looking at her with my jaw literally on the floor, she looked so damn sexy! I got an instant boner by just looking at her, maybe the Jameson was also playing a role... I don't know but she was damn sexy in that black lace with red heels, her look was more or less like Beyoncé on the video of partition with her hair

hanging lose. If this was how my birthdays from here on were going to be then can I be born every day of the year?! This was probably the best gift I've ever gotten on my birthday. Forget the random sex, this was paradise. I smiled and shook my head. How did I not know she could dance, I don't mean club dancing...? I mean this kind of dancing. She "danced for me" good. When she was done she came to sit on top of me and wrapped her arms around my neck.

Her: happy birthday Melokuhle

I flipped us over and made her lie on the bed.

Me: where the hell did you learn to move like that?

She smirked

Her: I just can.

She pulled me in for a kiss, her kiss was hungry. It wasn't your slow typical kiss, that was the kind of kiss that was saying "f*ck me hard" and

that's exactly what I was going to do. As I was kissing her I was undressing her. her boobs were now free, I went down to suck on them and she let out slight moans while my hand made its way down to her underwear where I slid my hand in and started rubbing her hard, she was wet already but I didn't just want her wet. I kept fingering her until she was about to cum then I stopped and looked up at her with a smirk. I took her underwear and everything else off of her and stripped myself naked with her help then I took a condom and slipped it on and went in without warning making her scream. I don't even know how many rounds we had but I know we had a lot of sex. We both passed out with her on top of me. I think the alcohol had a hand in us having so much sex. I was brushing her hair as she slept on top of me just admiring this freak of mine. I'm glad she was a freak for me, I was proud that I unleashed her inner freak.

Me: Yaya?

She was sleeping peacefully. I took my phone and looked at the time and it was just after 10, we were supposed to be at the club but it didn't matter because my party was right here. I got her off of me as gentle as I could and then I wore my briefs and cleaned up a little, I had a dozen missed calls and so did she. I got back to Siya.

//Me: my girlfriend is here with me and you busy leaving me more missed calls than she would. What do you want?

Him: where did you guys disappear off to? both your phones have been ringing unanswered

Me: then maybe you should learn to take a hint then

Him: screw you! We at Cubana, you guys coming?

Me: probably, I'll hear what Yaya says

Him: she really has you by the balls!

He said laughing

Me: you'll understand when you have a girlfriend of your own.

Him: right... Bye Melo//

I went back to the room and she was still sleeping, I couldn't resist taking pictures of her. I'm that kind of boyfriend who takes random pictures of his girlfriend because she's that beautiful. I got dressed and kissed her forehead and went to check what was going on upstairs because the music was still booming. There were still people dancing and drinking and having fun. I headed back to the room and Yaya wasn't on the bed anymore, I went to check on her in the bathroom and she was throwing up.

Me: how do you feel?

She was sitting by the toilet seat.

Her: I am never drinking again!

I chuckled.

Me: shame mahn

Her: I feel terrible.

She sat down and pouted. I took a picture of her

Her: you better delete that Melokuhle

She threw up again. I took a glass and got her some water and gave it to her laughing at her.

Me: you so cute you know that

Her: screw you

Me: you did, a lot of times even

She threw the water on me

Me: geeeez Yandiswa!

Her: that will teach you not to mess with me.

She got up and went to get herself cleaned up by the sink

Me: no apology?

Her: it wasn't a mistake.

She brushed her teeth and walked into the

shower when she was done. I took my clothes off and went to join her, it was an innocent shower. We both got out and wiped ourselves, lotioned our bodies and then got dressed. She wore a blue low cut jean, white vest crop top but only showed her belly button, a denim jacket and navy suede heels which she made me tie. I wore navy joggers, black t-shirt, denim jacket and black timberlands. We were on fleek that much I can say. I took our bags and we headed out to the car with both our phones in her hand. I drove us to Cubana and called Siya who told us where they were sitting and we headed over to their table.

Ase: I was sure you guys weren't coming

Me: why wouldn't we come? This was my idea after all

Ledi: so where were you guys anyway?

I looked at Yaya to respond

Yaya: none of your business.

She said taking a can of coke.

Ase: aren't you drinking anymore?

Me: The Jameson she drank got her good

I said laughing at her and she gave me a death stare in return. I mouthed "sorry", she just rolled her eyes.

Ase: you sure it's just the Jameson?

She said winking at Yaya. My poor baby was disgusted by the sight of alcohol. I whispered

Me: we can always go home

Her: no its ok, I'll be fine

Me: you sure?

Her: I'll be fine babe. Ase lets go dance

Me: take care of each other

Yaya: we will if you let us.

With that they walked away leaving us with Ledi and Nita. Nita didn't come to the boat party

because she gets water sick.

Ledi: so where did you guys disappear to?

Me: as Yaya said, none of your business.

I said sipping on a glass of Hennessy. From where we were sitting you could see her and my sister as they owned the dancefloor. Nita and Ledi decided to leave us and go join their friends.

Siya: is Anita still dating that dude?

Me: not that I know off... why?

Luc: he has a crush

Siya: it's not a crush. I just think she's pretty that's all

Me: how long have you known her for you to only notice that now again?

Luc: that is a good question. Siya what do you have to say to that?

Siya: both of you are retards. Forget I said

anything

Me: from what I've gathered, she is a serious relationship kind of person ey

Luc: you know how Bonke is about her dude. Despite everything that's happened, he doesn't want any man near her

Me: Luc is right.

Siya: I can take Bonke

Me: confident aren't we? If you want her I think you should go for her... at the end of the day it's not up to Bonke, it's up to her

Siya: we've been flirting and she's been throwing some serious vibes at a nigga

Luc: and you still haven't tapped that?

Me: not every girl is for tapping cousin!

As we were sitting chatting like that we were joined by my cousins, Aunt Anathi's twins (Asakhe and Asange) and Uncle Alu's son,

Alungile. We greeted each other. And they sat down and bought more alcohol.

Me: where are the girlfriends?

Asange: with your sister and their friends.

Asakhe: how is it possible that you of all people does not have a girl sitting on your lap

Luc: he has a girlfriend now and she's dancing with Melody

Alu: excuse me what? Derrick Melokuhle Bess has a girlfriend???

Me: shut up!

Asange: who knew it was possible?

Me: blame her, she's different guys

Luc: ncooooooh.... Wimp!

Me: shut up!

Alu: if you can have a girlfriend then there's still hope for poor old Luc over here.

He said patting his back

Luc: shut up!

A while later the girls came to join us and mine sat on top of me.

Asakhe: so this is her?

I nodded

Yaya: what about me?

He shook his head.

Asange: you beautiful that's all.

Me: bae these are my cousins, Asange, Asakhe and Alungile. Guys this is Yandiswa, my girlfriend

Her: nice to meet you all

She shook their hands. The night went well with everyone getting along and no trouble. We left the club around 3am. When we got home we headed straight to bed. The next morning, we woke up around 10, only because my phone had

been ringing. I checked the screen and it was Asange.

//Me: dude what?

Him: let's have breakfast!

Me: you called me for that?

Him: duh!

Me: isn't it late for breakfast now?

Him: dude its past 10. Just wash and come to Gateway, bring the Mrs along

Me: fine. //

By the time I was done talking she was awake and pressing her phone.

Me: we got to wash

Her: what for?

Me: the twins invited us for breakfast at Gateway

Her: do I have to come?

Me: I'm pretty sure Luhle and Londeka are going to be there. Don't be lazy now

Her: I'm not lazy, I'm tired that's all

Me: don't be like that. When we come back I'll be sure to give you a massage ok?

Her: you don't know how to

Me: have I ever given you one?

She shook her head

Me: exactly.

I kissed her forehead and got out of the covers.

Me: let's go and wash. It will be fun and you won't regret it

Her: fine stop trying to convince me now

We went to shower together and got out and wore simple. When we were done getting dressed we headed to Gateway and they were at Rocco mamas. After the breakfast turned into lunch we went to the beach, Ushaka to be

exact and we played those water games. We had lots of fun. After all the fun we had Yaya and I headed to my place and I gave her the massage of her life

Her: I had my doubts

Me: you don't have them anymore?

She shook her head.

Her: you are better than I had expected

She was laying with her stomach between my legs as I was sitting on top of her ass but not really sitting because my knees were supporting me.

Me: never doubt me again Missy. I'm the best at these things. Just like I'm the best boyfriend EVER

Her: let's not get ahead of ourselves please

Me: why not? it's fun. I thought you loved it when I get cocky

Her: I have my days, today is not one of them.
Its Siya's birthday let's call him

Me: we seeing him tonight

Her: he's my friend and I can't not wish him a
happy birthday. We going to sing for him

Me: you can't sing

Her: so? Stop killing my vibe!

She took my phone and went to Siya's contact
and made me sing with her that boring happy
birthday song. Siya was in stitches of laughter
this whole time as we sang for him. Later on
around 4 we showered and prepared to go to
Siya's party which was obviously at a club to get
drunk. Today Yaya and I promised each other
that we weren't drinking, yesterday was too epic
so tonight was just a chilled night for both of us.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES
LOVE*

.

.

39

I missed home, i missed my mom and i missed my granny too. I was glad to be home but not so glad to be away from my guy. He and i grew stronger by the day and so did our sex-game. You can go as far as calling us addicts, we've done it ANYWHERE doable! I loved my Melo and i couldnt wait for holidays to end already. Mom and i drove off to Hillcrest Township where my grandma lived. The house wasnt really packed, i greeted Sisi who was cooking supper with her favorite slab of chocolate and then greeted my little cousins in the lounge before going to granny's room. She was sitting pressing her phone probably reading a message or something... you never really know with her.

Me: Hey granny

I bent down to hug her tight and she hugged me tighter.

Her: Yandi! How are you my baby?

She said kissing me.

Me: i'm good granny, how are you?

Her: im good. Hows school? Hows Durban? Did you pass?

Trust her to bombard you with a lot of questions at the same time. I sat down next to her on top of the queen size bed in the middle of the room.

Me: school is amazing, i had this gig to take pictures at this other graduation party just last month

Her: thats great, where are the pictures? Let me see

Me: i'll show you tomorrow, they on my camera

and it is in the car at the moment.

I cant give my granny my camera, there are some nude shots in there; theres shots of Melo, me and both of us together so NO granny must wait till i move them to my laptop.

Her: ok my baby.

Sisi brought her food and granny suggested we go to the lounge instead. They walked out and left me dialling Melo's number.

//him: miss me already?

Me: when have i never not?

Him: you addicted to me

Me: dont flatter yourself Sphe

Him: really? You really going to call me that?

Sphe is a character from Tangled, its something his mom used to call him when he was a kid. He hates me calling him that.

Me: that will teach you not to mess with me

Him: whatever. You home?

Me: yes i'm home, its actually the reason why i called

Him: i taught you well

Me: what? No! I taught you well idiot!

Him: whatever makes you sleep at night. Hows granny?

Me: she wants to see pictures from the 21st but....

Him: oh shiiit... i told you to delete those pictures

Me: we took them this morning idiot! Where was i going to get the time?

Him: on the bus maybe? You can be so dumb at times

Me: we back at the insults now? This relationship is toxic

Him: you so right. We are bad for each other

Me: so we both agree? We should call it quits

Him: mos definetely. We done

Me: we over

He cracked up in laughter and so did i. We had our times where we would be this crazy. I suddenly missed him so much.

Him: i miss you crazypants

Me: and i miss you

Him: when are you coming back?

Me: next year January... i'll know when i get my results

Him: January is tooo far

Me: says the person going to Amsterdam for his holidays

Him: i asked you a million times to come with

Me: and i told you a million times that i couldnt

Him: yeah yeah i know ganny's child and all...

just come back soon

Me: i make no promises but i will try come back early

Him: not assuring but i'll take whatever i can get

Me: i have to go. I love you ok

Him: i love you too.

I kept quiet and so did he.

Him: drop the call kaloku

Me: why dont you?

Him: because im the one that called you

Me: exactly, you called me not the otherway around Melo

Him: we really doing this huh?

Me: seems like it.

Him: if i drop the call, you'll call me and shout

Me: ok, bye//

Knowing him he was probably going to call me

again to shout at me for dropping the call just like that. And just as i was waiting like that, my phone rang again and it was him.

//Me: hey you

Him: im never going to call you again

Me: you called me to tell me you never calling me again? Really?

Him: now that i think about it... its actually dumb

Me: its cute. Its these little things that make me fall for you

Him: weird but ok...

Me: hahaha riight. Melo i have to go eat and catch up with family

Him: but i dont want you to

Me: you dont have much of a choice here

Him: yeah i guess. Bye now

Me: bye bae//

I walked out of the room smiling. He had that effect on me, making me smile without even trying. My boyfriend did wonders to me no doubt, be it he was around or not. I got to the lounge and conversed with the family. It was good to be home that much i can say. After supper mom and i drove off to Fernhill my home. On the way she was asking me about school and Melo., she stil didnt know Melo and i were dating.

Me: he is still an ass if that is what you asking

Her: one that you love

Me: what?

Her: i got a call from Amahle Bess asking me that you join them for holidays

Me: when was that?

Her: about a week ago... so?

Me: so?

Her: you 18 now, i wont be mad. I know you and

Melokuhle are dating im not stupid but baby please dont forget the reason you even in Durban ok?! Date him but dont forget that you went there to obtain your degree.

I looked at her. Its shocking that mom was giving me this talk, did Mrs Bess tel her about Melo and i? Nah she wouldnt dare tell mom. She is supposed to be my other mom in Durban.

Her: dont give me that look. But please baby, school first

Me: yess mom

Her: lets never have this conversation again. Its weird and awkward

Me: you telling me.

We got home and she parked the car, i took my bags and we headed inside.

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

40 - Melo

A lot has happened in one week, the i paid her back the money she used to buy me a watch and you can imagine how that went. She came to the office and put it on my desk, thats the stubborn girlfriend i have. That same day she met up with her sister, yes she and Sinothando were sisters and they seemed fond of each other, a few days from there she told me she bumped into Mr Bashe who offered to take her out to lunch to apologise for his behaviour but my Yaya didnt accept the apology; i tried convincing her to but nope she refused and i didnt push any further, she would forgive him when she was ready to anyway. She was gone... Just like that and i was only going to see her in January or so she says. I know how DUT is, what if they strike and then school starts in February? I cant not see her for that long now, its not fair. Shiiit! Her being away that long

meant no sex! How was i going to survive a month without sex? Not just any sex, but sex from her. This is bad! Really bad! I was at my place supposed to be watching tv but my eyes were glued onto my wallpaper which was my lovely girlfriend sleeping. As i was busy lost in the moment, my phone rang and it was her.

//Me: you dont get tired of me huh?

Her: your mother told mine that you and i were dating

I chuckled. Mom would never!

Me: nah fam not Amahle. Think of somebody else

Her: if it wasnt her, then who?

Me: i dont know but it definetely was not Mrs Bess.

Her: but Mrs Bess called mom and asked her that i join you guys for your trip

Me: she did what???

Why am i even acting surprised? Of cause mom would do that. Her late mother in law once did that. Seemingly mom was growing up to become like my late grandma Bess, even dad said that and Damien too.

Her: now tell me that she is not the one who told my mom

Me: look, i know my mother and believe when i tell you this. She would never tell your mom, maybe she asked your mom that you join us, that i am positive she did but trust me when i tell you that she didnt snitch on you. Shes supposed to be yoursecond mom, remember?

She kept quiet for a while and so did i, it then hit me...

Me: does Lathitha happen to have your mother's number?

Her: of cause. Incases of emergencies. Why?

Me: do i always have to spell it out for you... isnt

it obvious

Her: she wouldnt go that far

Me: wanna bet?

Her: you really think she told mom?

Me: check your mom's phone and get back to me

She huffed

Her: for her sake i really hope you wrong

I chuckled

Me: why? What are you going to do to her? Can i watch?

Her: screw you Melokuhle

Me: you know i want to, so bad even

Her: sadly you wont

Me: Yandiswa i miss you dammit! I miss f*cking you til the morning. I miss going down on you.

Yeses!

I really did miss her. Yes i saw her this morning, yes i dropped her off at the bus station but it didnt change the fact that i missed her... and her palace.

Her: stop it.

Me: wait.... are you blushing?

Her so what if i am?

Me: of cause you are. Dont you miss me? Dont you miss being in paradise?

Her: you know i do... go masturbate to my nudes

Me: im not that desperate now. I'll wait till January

Her: wait... you dont?

Me: hell no! Thats disgusting.

Her: and going down on someone isnt?

Me: thats different and you know it!

Masturbating is for losers who dont get any

Her: you wont be getting any for a whole month, doesnt that make you a loser?

Me: who said i wont get any?

Her: Melokuhle if you dare

Me: chill woman

Her: Derrick im serious

Me: i said chill Yandiswa geez. I love you

Her: tell that to whoever you'll be screwing in my absence

Me: ok. I love you

Her: bye!//

She didnt even wait for my response. She could be so dramatic when she wanted to. My gosh you women! I decided to let her be, i texted her on whatsapp and she shockingly responded.

The next day i woke up and went to visit the family. We had a nice breakfast, Ase and i washed the dishes.

Her: with Yandiswa gone, does this mean we'll be seeing a lot of you here?

Me: probably... did mom tell Yandiswa's mom about us?

Her: not that i know of. She would never

Me: Yaya refuses to believe me

Her: she should ask her mom.

Me: yeah... did mom tell you that she called Yaya's mom and asked that Yaya goes on holiday with us?

Her: i was there when she made the call

Me: a little heads up maybe

Her: what for? Mom likes Yandiswa, not because you guys are dating or anything... i asked her if Yandi could join us and she thought it was a great idea

Me: and none of ya'll thought of talking to me about it?

Her: what for?

Me: is her being my girlfriend enough reason maybe?

Her: you so dramatic

She said handing me the last dish to pack.

Me: you should get a boyfriend already, you starting to annoy me

Her: and having a boyfriend means i'll annoy you less?

Me: he'll keep you preoccupied

Her: right

She rolled her eyes and walked to the lounge, i followed right behind her.

Me: so how long is this trip?

Dad: meaning?

Me: how long will be gone?

Mom: why?

Ase: this is about "Yaya"

Me: shut up!

Mom: i thought you were looking forward to this trip

Me: when i didnt have a girlfriend...

Mom: your father is staying a week, you can come back with him

Dad: two weeks honey. I cant spend christmas alone now

Me: how long were you guys planning on staying?

Ase: a month... duh! Aint like theres anything we rushing back to

Me: right...

Mom: you going to be fine... you'll get to bond with us

She said faking a wide smile

Me: exciting

I faked a cheer. Imagine being away from your future for a whole month?! These people were crazy. We conversed and planned activities for the trip, we were leaving tonight. Yaya texted me on Whatsapp and confirmed that it was Lathitha who told her mom about us, she even sent her a picture probably hoping Yaya's mom would break us up or something... i dont know what she thinks that one.

.

.



[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

So I asked mom and she told me that it was Lathitha who told her about Melo and me, I told mom how Melo and I became a couple seeing that the last time we spoke of Melo and I, I said I'd rather die than be with him which was dramatic of me now that I think about it. I told mom about how Lathitha and I stopped being friends and the things she's done to ruin Melo's life in a way and in our catch up session I also told her about Mr Bashe's apology. I would say dad, but that man is no father to me. oh and I also told her about my sister who happens to have two brothers, Sino and I got along like mac and cheese, she was in Matric actually at Durban girls high, she was 16 years old and she had two brothers, Christian and Christopher, her father was engaged to a white woman. The twins were 10 years old. Mom advised me that I forgive him, it was the right thing to do... well according to her and Melo. Yesterday night I decided to move "our" pictures to my laptop in a

folder stored in another folder and another folder in it, basically the folder containing nudes needed to be hidden. The only pictures left on my camera were petty pictures, pictures meant for my portfolio and the graduation pictures. We went to have breakfast over at my grandmother's house and my uncle was there, he and I were like father and daughter, together with my cousin Awonke who was 6 years older than me. breakfast was very nice and after breakfast, Wonke and I went to town to shop and be girls. Well also to catch up with each other. My stubborn boyfriend sent me the money it cost me to get him the watch.... Again this morning. I tried calling him but he wasn't reachable, he was on a flight to Amsterdam. Uncle dropped us off at Circus Triangle and we headed inside chatting.

Her: but how is Durban? Missy looks Beautiful, she I flourishing!

I giggled.

Me: Durban is Durban

Her: oh no! you are not going to tell me that crap! You don't giggle and say "Durban is Durban"

Me: what? It's just as I say it mos.

Her: and I'm wearing pink shoes right?

She was actually wearing black and white vans.

Me: fine. I'll tell you when we sitting down

Her: nope. Tell me now

Me: geeez! So there's this guy*I said with the most biggest smiles* name is Melokuhle, he and I have been dating for 3 weeks now. I met him at my birthday party and he was straight of GORGE! Well he was also rude to me so we didn't get along at all, the next day he walked in on me naked in my room and the other time at his home his sister and I were wearing bikinis, my towel fell exposing me in a bikini. The guy is cocky and arrogant oh and how can I forget...

he's a rich kid

Her: sounds interesting

Me: he got a BMW i8 for his birthday by the way

Her: you kidding me!

I showed her pictures. We were looking around at sportscene

Her: is this him?

She said showing a picture of Melo in a well fitted suit on his way to work at his apartment. I nodded

Her: dude he is flames! how old is he? Does he maybe have a brother or a dad... I'm not that picky really

I laughed at her as she drooled over Melo

Me: his father is married and no, he is the only son. Plus, you have a boyfriend

She was now going through my pictures; I didn't mind really.

Her: boring. Wait is this Amahle Bess?

She said showing me a picture of Melo with his mom on his birthday.

Me: yes, it is she's his mom

Her: your boyfriend is Damon Bess's son? Girl you've hit the jackpot!

Me: what? No mahn

Her: whatever you say. All I'm saying is that you've hit the jackpot. Can we swap boyfriends please?

We both laughed

Me: I didn't know how much I missed your crazy ass. And no! we cannot swap boyfriends.

Her: fine. I have to ask, with a guy like this... don't girls give you death stares?

Me: I'm literally arguing with his... what's the word?... flings

Her: of cause, pretty boys always come with

baggage

Me: true that but he handles it and so do I. at the end of the day I dated him knowing very well what his past looked like

Her: ncoooh young love is so adorable

Me: whatever. Tell me about Soso

Her boyfriend is a cop, he's 3 years older than her and they've been at this since last year. He's a great guy. She smiled

Her: he is amazing, I keep waiting for him to be a jerk or something but nope, nothing. he is an angel bruh

Me: which is a good thing

Her: of cause, we do argue though like any normal couple. This one time he scolded me for taking a taxi when I could have just called him

I laughed at her

Her: I'm not used to this

Me: ncoooh that is so cute of him

Her: yoh ha.a he needs to chill. I've been taking taxi's ever since my Zingisa days

Me: he is a cop, it's his job to worry about you. Especially with the taxi violence and all

Her: whatever I can take care of myself

Me: riiight...

Her: when was this? you guys look hot

It was a picture of us taken by one of our friends at the club on Siya's birthday, I was sitting on his lap..... as usual J

Me: that was last week Sunday at the club, it was one of our friend's birthday

Her: you guys seem to go out a lot

Me: hahahaha yeah we do ey

She said that showing me a picture of us on the boat.

Me: wait let me see that

Her: it's your phone dude!

She handed it to me, she was on my WhatsApp images and it was a picture I had not seen. It was a cute picture that much I can say. I smiled

Her: ok... can I have the phone now

Me: jealousy makes you nasty.

I said giving her my phone and she stuck her tongue out at me. We continued looking around and then we walked out and went to Legit. I saw some old high school classmates and we hugged and stuff then headed different ways. While Wonke and I were looking at some clothes my phone rang and she handed it to me, it was my Melo.

//Me: hey baby

Him: missed calls ezingaka Yaya? (so many missed calls)

Me: I'll never get used to you speaking Xhosa

Him: I sound sexy right? I know

Me: I take it you just landed?

Him: yes, babe we just did

Me: how was your trip?

Him: tiring. I just want to shower and sleep.
What are you doing?

Me: I'm in town with my cousin window shopping

Him: at least you'll use the money

Me: which is the reason I called. Melokuhle I bought you that watch because I wanted to buy it for you

Him: Yaya I'm too tired to even argue about this now

Me: we don't even have to argue about it
Melokuhle, I'll transfer the money back to your account

Him: take it as a Christmas present or a happy belated gift or something

Me: no.

Him: do you have to be stubborn about everything?

Me: do you have to be stubborn about everything?

Him: seriously?

Me: I have an idea; how would you feel if I paid you back for the NWJ gift set you bought me on my birthday

Him: it was a gift Yandiswa

Me: and so was the watch

Him: a 2 point something watch? Really Yandiswa?!

Me: a 1 point something set Melokuhle!

Him: you're a student, you can't be spending so much money on me

I had no come back

Him: I appreciate your gift, I really do babe and

thank you for it. its holidays and I am pretty sure that you won't really be working much there in Mthatha so please just keep the money and buy whatever you want to buy yourself this holiday rather than just "window-shopping". Buy new lingerie to wear for me next time I see you... anything babe

Me: you won't let this go huh?

Him: I'm your boyfriend and I'm allowed to spoil you every now and then

Me: fine.

Him: I love you ok?!

Me: I love you too

Him: say hi to Wonke and enjoy your holidays ok?

Me: will do, thanks and enjoy your holidays too

Him: bye now

Me: bye//

Wonke: you guys are seriously arguing about money?

I nodded. Come to think of it, it's all we ever argued about. Melo likes spending money, he throws money at everything I happen to like and uses me being a student as an excuse.

Me: because I am a student, I am not allowed to get him expensive gifts or spend my pocket money on something. it's annoying really.

Her: it's cute thou

Me: trust me it's not.

We bought a few things at Legit and then we went to window shop at Mr price, we got to the earring and necklace section and I just laughed. Firstly, Melo would probably kill me for even being at Mr Price, he hates the shop, says their clothes are cheap and they get ruined with just one wash. Ever since him in the picture I shop at Legit, Spotscene, The Fix and other "better" shops.

Her: what?

Me: Melo would murder me for even being here

Her: what? Why?

Me: he hates this place, says their clothes are cheap and get ruined easily

Her: well he has a point

Me: but its affordable cuz

Her: of cause it is.

Me: so on my birthday he bought me a necklace set; earrings, necklace and bracelet from NWJ

Her: you lie!

She put her hand on her mouth

Me: so I call him and tell him I don't want it, well it's not that I didn't want it but because it was from him and he and I weren't really "friends" at the time, he told me to throw it or something, he even told me I should be grateful because this necklace wouldn't give me any rash like the

ones I'm used to from Mr Price

She laughed at me

Her: you guys have been through a lot huh

Me: you have no idea! he and I were like water and ice

Her: but not anymore which is a good thing now

Me: we have our days. You'll forgive me, I love talking about my boyfriend. He is literally my favourite top

Ok maybe to my friends because I know that they would never do anything to jeopardise my relationship with Melo so I'm comfortable.

There was a time where Mrs Bess gave me a talk about telling friends everything and anything going on in your relationship because friends nowadays are not to be trusted. She went on to tell me about how Iyana came about, her best friend seduced her husband who was her boyfriend then and had sex with him, well he

was drugged, she tricked him by putting on Ama's perfume to have sex with Mr Bess. A few months later Aya was pregnant with Yana but Ama being the goodhearted person she is she forgave Aya but their friendship was never the same anymore.

Her: don't we all enjoy talking about them? I mean what's love without a little bae obsession

We both laughed. She was right. I don't understand people who aren't a little obsessed with their boyfriend's shame!

Me: exactly.

We went to pay for the things she had bought and then we went to have lunch at Wimpy. We got a table for two and sat down and placed our orders. We started catching up on pretty much everything, we took dozens of pictures with my phone and hers. I left my camera with granny in Hillcrest. When our date was over we caught a taxi home, home being granny's house of course.

My camera had lots of pictures of the family all of a sudden, but then again what was I expecting really? Mom and I headed to Fernhill around 7pm. We got home and switched on the tv, I was busy chatting with Sino on WhatsApp. She was a sweetheart that child.

**Her: so dad told mom about you

Me: what do you mean?

Her: I mean expect a call from mom

Me: uhhm ok...

Her: she's pretty cool shame so don't panic

Me: I'd say I'll be the judge but there's no way I'm meeting her or anything like that

Her: come on don't be like that, you two will get along just fine

Me: really now?!

Her: trust me. she'll probably invite you over for dinner

Me: and I won't attend. I'm not tryna play no happy family

Her: there's no justifying dad's actions towards you but please forgive him Yaya, he regrets what he did

Me: good for him

Her: come on Yaya you not that person.

Me: can I just be given time, this man flatly denied me, painted my mom as a hoe when he knew very well that he was the only guy who's ever had sex with her and then he was finally able to stand on his own two feet, he doesn't even try to contact me or whatsoever and when we finally do meet he behaves like a jerk. No offense or anything but I don't need your father

Her: I hear you. But just know that mom is nothing like him

Me: I make no promises but I will hear her out

Her: great. Bye for now I have to go

Me: bye**

This whole time I was chatting on WhatsApp with Sino mom was making small talk with me about everything that's happened this year and the conversation I was having with Sino

Her: it's all up to you baby

Me: come on mom, what do you think I should do

Her: what your heart feels you should do baby.

Me: you know I hate it when you say that. So how are things with Dr... what's his surname again?

Her: Dr none of your business. There is nothing going on there

Me: come on mom

Her: but baby there's really nothing to tell

Me: ok fine don't share... I'm curious

Her: of?

Me: you know how you normally rock up in Durban as if its next door, what would happen if you bumped into Mr Bashe?

Her: nothing

Me: you mean to tell me that seeing him wouldn't spark anything?

Her: it wouldn't spark anything. I'm over the guy.

Me: not even anger?

Her: not even anger.

I nodded

Her: the questions you ask

Me: I just want to know. I mean you guys never really called it quits or anything

Her: yes, but his actions called it quits for us. had he been man enough maybe I'd have a different response

Me: ok... so what now that he wants to be in my life?

Her: then he can be in your life if you want him in it baby.

Me: what about in your life?

Her: my life is better off trust me

Me: I see that. You glowing

Her: what?! What are you talking about?

Me: I don't know, you lighter and more relaxed and pretty much happy

Her: because life is treating me well. This thing called prayer goes a long way

Me: of cause it does

I said holding back laughter. Reason I'm laughing is because there's a time Anita once lied about going to church only for her to go and screw Bonke. It was funny really because Ledi and I kept making fun of her and how she had been "praying" all night. it was funnier then. Her and Bonke aren't back together but Nita is using him for sex

Her: why are you laughing?

Me: not laughing mom, just thinking about something my friends and I joke about.

Speaking of which I need to call them, it's been a while

Her: you live with these people

Me: sorry but news never end mom.

I said walking to my room to conference call the girls.

//Me: how are you my lovies?

Ledi: I miss you guys already

Me: Where's Nita?

Nita: I'm home, I got here today

Me: well we miss you too

Nita: yeah we miss you too honey

Me: aren't you going to that guy for holidays?

Ledi: hell NO! he is coming here tomorrow

Me: please keep off the kitchen counters and tables where we eat on

Nita: yeah Ledi please

Ledi: I make no promises. I'll jik the places ok?!

Me: don't use them at all Ledi. You have a room

Nita: mom thinks I'm pregnant

Me: excuse me what?

Ledi: no ways

Nita: that's exactly what I told her

Me: you and Bonke used protection right?

Nita: of cause

Ledi: what about that day...?

Nita: wait what day?

Me: when you came back from Bonke crying, when you found out about him and Emilia

Nita: shiit!

Ledi: explains the amount of sex you've been

having

Me: Nita you ok?

Nita: what if I'm pregnant?

Ledi: then that baby will have the coolest Aunts ever

Me: take a test friend and take it from there

Nita: mothers know these things

Ledi: but this time she is wrong babe. Let's be positive

Nita: I hope so. I can't afford to have a baby yoh! a baby would mean me quitting dancing

Me: we don't know if you pregnant or not. Let's not jump into conclusions just yet

Ledi: Yandi is right.

We shifted the topic and spoke of other things instead until we said our goodbyes//

I felt sorry for Nita. As for me, Melo suggested I get on the pill or the injection and I went with

the pill which meant joining the gym because the pill has side effects, like gaining weight or having bigger boobs or something along those lines. I was on Minessse, I took it at 8am every morning, it wasn't easy but I had to and it also helped with my period pains. We hadn't stopped using the condom as per say but there were those times when in was unavailable like in the shower or at the office or club, rather safe than sorry.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

42 – Melo

Amsterdam went as planned, dad and I came

back after two weeks as planned. I must say it was good to be back. Yaya and I spoke everyday, called each other on a daily and we didn't get tired of each other. Oh did I mention that she passed all of her subjects with 75 and above? Yes, she passed with cum laude. I passed all my subjects, not with cum laude thou. She and I would exchange pictures everyday even and it was great. We did this thing where we would send each other a picture of the other every morning just to remind them of what they missing, this was going to go on until we see each other again and I must say her pictures were torturous. I'd get a hard on just by seeing her, every time she sent me a nude you would swear it was my first time seeing her body. It was so perfect. Her boobs, my word! How could someone look that good? I came back this afternoon; I was at the Bess mansion. I woke up and checked my texts and a name I haven't seen in ages had sent me a picture, it was from

Kate. It was a picture of two pregnancy tests both positive. I called her same time.

//Me: Kate

Her: hi

Me: I just saw your message now

Her: yep

Me: where are you now? can we talk?

Her: I'm at res.

Me: can I come over?

Her: sure

She was crying, judging by the sound of her voice.

Me: be there in 30 min//

She just cut the call on me. This was the last thing I needed right now, Yaya and I were happy to that level of happiness and now this? she was going to dump me straight up. I took my phone, wallet and car keys and drove off to

Kates res. I got there after an hour because of festive traffic, I parked my car and locked it then went to Kate's room, I knocked and she answered after a while. She had puffy eyes almost like she had been crying for some time. I pulled her to my chest, it felt like I was cheating on my girlfriend but Kate needed me. I closed the door behind me. she broke the hug.

Me: how far are you?

Her: I don't know, a month and some week's maybe

Me: So what we going to do now?

Her: I don't know

Me: Let's go to the doctor Kate

We were sitting on her bed, well I was at the edge of it and she was sitting in the corner starring into airspace.

Her: Can I just process this first then then we'll talk about the rest tomorrow. I took the test this

morning...

The time was just after 2pm, we arrived in SA this morning around 10am.

Me: oh cool.

I buried my face in my hands. This was really the last thing she and I both needed, she had school to finish and I still had my articles and stuff to do. We sat there in silence

Her: This is freaking me out

Me: It's also freaking me out

Her: please just leave. I want to be alone

Me: Kate come on

Her: Derrick please just leave. we'll talk about this later on or tomorrow, I just want to be alone right now

Me: please don't make any hasty decisions without talking to me first.

Her: sure.

I got up and headed for the door and so did she, she waited for me to walk out before locking the door behind me. What have I put myself into? What am I going to do with a baby? Yandiswa is not like my mom, she wouldn't be so forgiving about the situation even though it happened before her and I. we've once spoke of this and she told me flat out that she wasn't cut out for baby mama drama, said she was way too young for baby mama drama so this, this was going to be the end of us no doubt. I got into my car and drove off to my place. I needed to do some thinking. I needed a drink. I needed sex! I got to my apartment and poured myself some scotch and went to seat in the lounge and blasted my stereo. I had a dozen missed calls from Yaya, mom, dad and Ase but mostly from Yaya but I didn't pick up any of their calls, Yaya didn't give up of cause. This was a lot for me. I drowned my sorrows in some scotch.

.

.

-Kate

How could I have been so stupid? Who sleeps with someone without using a condom? Who is so dumb enough? to top it off the father is Melo Bess the player. Mom was going to kill me no doubt! After Melo left, my friend Sanele whom I sent a picture of the same test to came over to my room. The first thing she did was hug me tightly which only made me cry harder. Mom did not need this, reason I say mom is because as much as Melo has the means, the baby wouldn't be his to take care of, it would be my responsibility and it would hold me back from school. It's bad enough that I'm only doing my first year going to do my second this year and then there's my little brother in a private school who is also mom's responsibility alone so this baby was unneeded baggage. Mom is a lecturer and she pays 25% of my fees via subsidy but even that she's still paying something and she's

struggling as it is. This was just bad. Sanele took me to the bed and we sat down. she took my hands into hers.

Her: did you tell Melo?

I nodded

Her: and what did he say?

Me: we didn't really have a heart to heart conversation about this, he was as stressed as I am. He has a girlfriend now and this is the last thing he needs

Her: either way, this is his child

Me: I know but it's a child I do not want, it came at the wrong time

Her: so what are you suggesting?

Me: I can't keep this baby!

Her: Kate are you sure about this? I understand you not ready for a baby but abortion?

Me: Sanele I can't keep this baby; I wouldn't be

able to get over the disappointment on my mom's face. This would kill my grandmother Sanele

Her: Kate both these people love you, at some point they will forgive you

Me: I can't do this to them Sanele, you have to understand

Her: I understand babe, can't you at least sleep and think about this properly before you make a decision you'll end up regretting for life

I sighed.

Her: just think about this proper babe, I know you scared to disappoint your mom but babe imagine the disappointment you would get from her if you aborted

She had a point but I wasn't from Durban originally, my family is from Kokstad, mom came here for work and I came here to study and get my degree. How would this even work?

I tried to sleep but with no luck, I couldn't stop thinking about this pregnancy. it was past 8 now, still couldn't sleep and still no word from Melo, I can't say I wasn't worried about him but he wasn't my problem. Just as I was in bed like that, I got a call from Melo.

//Him: hey

Me: hi

Him: you still awake?

Me: I can't sleep

Him: Maybe it's because you thinking of a lot of things. Listen to music. It helps a bit

Me: How can I not overthink? And you, you just seem chilled with everything. How am I the only one panicking here Derrick?

Him: You right, I seem chilled but I'm actually not. Having us both Panicking won't help

Me: I'm not ready for a baby

I said with tears flowing to my pillow, just the thought of this made me cry, I cannot imagine having a baby. I'm only turning 18 this year so a baby is a NO NO!

Me: What will I say to my mom? How will I even tell her?

Him: Let's first be 100% sure that you pregnant first and for how many weeks then we'll figure it out..... let's not think about that yet....

Me: Both tests are positive and apparently they are very much accurate... what are the chances of me not being pregnant?

Him: Geeeeez, I don't know. That's what I'm tryna figure out

Me: I'm scared

Him: I'm also scared Kate, but we'll get through this...

Me: is that a promise?

Him: Yes, of cause it is.....

Me: you can't be making such promises Derrick, you have a girlfriend

Him: can we focus on the matter at hand please

Me: You do realize I'm from Kokstad right...

Him: Yea I do, and...?

Me: How would this work out?

Him: The baby or this sudden relationship?

Me: Both

Him: Ummmh, I don't have everything figured out yet. But my best hopes are to try making it work. It can be you schooling part time, and getting a good paying job, I'll give you a car to make travelling easier so that distance won't be an issue. I don't know yet Kate. I don't have everything figured out.

Me: Goodnight

Him: Goodnight//

I think the pregnancy hormones were also

playing a role in my mood swings. I was annoyed by him really. I decided to try and catch up on some sleep but nothing, the one time I actually needed the sleep it was nowhere to be found. This sucked really.

.

.

-Melo

I wasn't drunk, I couldn't bring myself to. my phone wouldn't stop ringing. It was Yaya. I finally decided to answer her call, I've avoided her long enough anyway.

//Her: Melokuhle what the hell? Have you any idea how worried I've been? Even your mom called me asking about you. Why weren't you answering your phone? Is everything ok?

Me: everything is fine Yaya. I was sleeping

Her: you lying, you not that deep of a sleeper
Melokuhle

Me: right.

Her: What am I missing? Did I do something?
what is it exactly Melokuhle?

-Kate is pregnant that's what you missing-

Me: it's nothing, I just miss you that's all

Her: and I'm supposed to believe that it's you
missing me that's making you all grumpy and
not taking your mothers calls?

Me: it's been a long day babe. How are you?

Her: I'm fine

Me: I'm also good thank you for asking

Her: you shutting me out and I don't understand
why

Me: I'm not shutting you out. Why would I do
that?

Her: I don't know, that's exactly what I'm trying
to understand Melokuhle

Me: I'm sorry you feel that way

Her: ok. goodnight

Me: haibo Yaya

Her: it's no point trying to have a conversation with someone who doesn't want to talk to you Melokuhle. It sucks

Me: I'm sorry

Her: sure

Me: I'm back in Durban

Her: great

Me: could you sound a little excited please

Her: for what? You not excited to be talking to me

Me: you know I love talking to you

Her: good night Melo//

She dropped the call on me just like that. She was mad at me, as much as I was in no mood to beg her she was my girlfriend and I stand a great chance to lose her over this so gathered

all my strength and dialled her number and called her. she was hesitant to answer my call; I know her all too well. She was probably watching her phone as my picture was flashing on her screen. Eventually she answered.

//Her: What?

Me: babe please

Her: what is it Melokuhle?

Me: I'm sorry

Her: what is it Melokuhle? What's bothering you?

Me: it's nothing babe, I just had a bad day that's all

Her: you still lying to me Melokuhle!

-how did she know?

Me: I want to tell you but just not know ok, please just trust me on this

Her: why won't you tell me now Melokuhle?

Me: it's not something to be said over the

phone Yaya, I need you to understand

Her: call me when you ready to tell me what this is Melokuhle//

Yandiswa could be so difficult for nothing when she wanted to yeses! I decided to let her be and try get some sleep I had one last drink before hitting the sac and I slept like a baby. The next day I woke up to screenshots from Kate, it was screenshots about Abortion, costs and all. I called her.

//Me: morning

Her: morning

Me: are you ready to talk today?

Her: yes. I'll come to your place

Me: what time?

Her: around 10.

Me: sure

Her: bye//

I checked my phone and there was nothing from Yaya. I texted her but nothing, she blue ticked me. I called her but nothing. personally I think she was being childish! I went to shower and went to go buy food, my fridge was empty. I came back before 10, a while later there was a knock on my door and it was Kate. She looked beautiful. I let her in.

Me: can I make you something to eat?

Her: I'm not hungry

Me: you have to eat something

Her: I had an apple on my way here

Me: sure.

I decided to make us sandwiches. When I was done I went to put the plates in the lounge with glasses of juice.

Her: no thanks.

I didn't respond.

Me: Abortion?

Her: what other option do we have Melo?

Me: keeping it maybe.

Her: that is not an option Derrick.

Me: ok fine. When are we going to the hospital to enquire then?

Her: Sanele and I went there this morning and from what we got it was said that 9 weeks and below the pill is R1000 and the surgical procedure is R1375...

Me: but you do you think it's been more than 9 weeks?

Her: I doubt it, it's probably 6 weeks

Me: which hospital did you go to? it better not be those shady places

Her: we went to Marie Stopes

Me: I would prefer you go to a hospital

Her: I don't have money for a hospital

Me: I'll give you the money then. Just go to a hospital and find out what they say

Her: cool.

Me: do you need me there?

Her: nope. Sanele will do this with me, this pregnancy changes nothing

Me: Kate I am sorry. I don't know what more I need to say to you. I screwed up, I know and no amount of I'm sorries will fix things or undo the pain I've caused you

Her: what's done is done Melo. Let's move on, you have

Me: Kate please

Her: look, I'll go book an appointment and get back at you

With that she stood up and headed for the kitchen, she didn't even touch her sandwich or anything. I didn't want love back or anything like that, I just wanted her and I to be on good terms

for the sake of peace. I went to close the door behind her and went back to the lounge to eat of which I didn't have an appetite. I needed Yandiswa here with me. I took my car keys, phone and wallet then headed to my car locking the door behind me. I called dad and told him I wouldn't be available for work the whole of this week, it was on a Monday by the way. My trip was headed to Mthatha, yes I was going to see her. I needed her, I needed to see her, talk to her, feel her touch and just be inside of her. I called her but she was ignoring my calls, I kept trying but still nothing. I didn't give up until she answered.

//Her: what do you want?

Me: Yaya I'm sorry

Her: for what Melokuhle huh?

Me: everything... listen, I will tell you everything when I see you

Her: why can't you just tell me the truth

Melokuhle huh? or am I not worthy of it? I thought we were a team here. You and I were supposed to have a truthful honest relationship but I don't see that happening.

She was on loud speaker as I was driving. The trip from Durban to Kokstad was the longest, the stop and go's were a drag. I was past the toll gates and headed to Shepston

Me: Yandiswa I will explain everything to you when I see you ok. please just calm down

Her: you making me worry Melokuhle, you go to Amsterdam and come back not answering your phone the whole day and still expect me to be cool and calm with your behaviour. You really making it hard not to think of the worst

Me: if you implying that I've cheated on you Yandiswa please get it out of your mind because I would never do that to you

Her: you not giving me much of a choice here Melokuhle. What am I supposed to think?

I took my phone from the phone stand but it fell... just great! I tried picking it up and when I had finally grabbed it a car was already swerving into me. I don't know how or what happened but next thing I knew it; it was lights out for me, well not really lights out as per say because I could hear a lot of noise and my head pounding. I tried to get up but my head was too heavy and sore. Minutes later I heard ambulance noises and police sirens. Just great, an accident was just what I needed now of all times?! I don't know when I lost conscious but when I woke up I was in what seemed like an ambulance on the inside and two guys asking me to some questions I couldn't really answer. It clicked to me, I was talking to Yandiswa, where the hell was my phone? I asked the guys where my phone was. I wasn't badly hurt or should I say I didn't feel like I was badly hurt, my head hurt and so did my leg but that was just about it. I didn't need a hospital. I needed to get

to my girlfriend.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES
LOVE*

.

.

43

One minute you talking to someone and the next you hear glasses shattering, I don't know how that sounds to you but it sure doesn't sound too good to me. Something had happened to him.

Me: Melo???

He didn't respond. I kept calling out his name but still nothing. My mind started wandering to a place it shouldn't. If he died his death would

be on my hands. I shouldn't have been arguing with him in the first place but naye he just makes me so mad! What was so bad that he couldn't tell me over the phone huh?

"Yandiswa yintoni"(what is it?)

I was brought back to earth by mom picking up my now broken phone... well it wasn't in pieces but my screen protector had cracked badly... just great! I think she came to check on me because of the impact of my phone hitting her tiles.

Me: I have to go back to Durban.

I said walking to my room and she followed behind me

Her: what? Why?

I could feel tears threatening to come out, my eyes were burning with tears. If something bad happened to him I'd never forgive myself. I took out my suitcase and put it on my bed without

responding to mom. All I knew was that my man needed me, it's my fault he's even in this.

Her: Yandiswa baby please talk to me

Me: I think Melo has just been in an accident

She put her hands on her mouth showing shock with a bit of fear. I didn't mind her, I just started packing. I needed to be in Durban ASAP! She stopped me and pulled me to her chest and that's when I let the tears win; Alicia Keys said it herself, these tears always win.

Me: it's all my fault mama. What if I killed him?

She just kept quiet and brushed my back as I sobbed on her chest. I felt really bad.

An hour later I was on a plane to Durban, my clothes would be coming back with Nita who by the way really was pregnant and let's say it wasn't as joyful as we had made it out to be the last time we had spoken over the phone. She was crying saying that her mom was

disappointed and that she would lose her spot over at Davily Dance Academy... weird name for a dance school but it was a combination of David and Lily Bess's names, Damien named it that to honour his parents. 3 hours later I was landing in Durban. I requested an uber and in no time it was here, I rushed to the hospital still trying to get hold of Melo but nothing. I went to st Augustin but he wasn't there. I called his sister, I was hoping and praying she knew something.

//Her: hey Yaya

Me: Mahle have you spoken to Melo?

Her: not since yesterday I think. Why what's wrong?

Me: have you spoken to your father at least?

Her: Yaya you scaring me. What's wrong?

Me: I don't think. A while back I was talking to him and then the next thing I don't know what

happened. Asemahle I'm scared.

Her: Yaya breathe ok. I am sure he is fine

How could she be this calm? A call came through on my phone.

Me: I have to go; I have a call coming through

Her: ok cool. Bye//

It was an unsaved number. I answered it scared of the worst.

//Me: Hello?

Person: hi, you speaking to Thabo

Me: ok?

Him: right. Is this Yandiswa?

Me: yes

Him: uhhhm I picked up this phone and it's written to call your number if lost

Me: uhhm what phone is that?

I needed to be certain!

Him: it's the latest iPhone, it's grey in colour and it has a picture of a sleeping girl as it's wallpaper

Me: Thabo where are you calling me from?

Him: Port Shepston.

Me: uhhm may I ask where you picked the phone up?

Him: there was an accident a few hours ago, I found the phone on the grass

Me: uhhm ok. I'm on my way there. Please send me a location I can meet you at.

Him: sure//

He cut the call. I was defeated. What kind of hospital doesn't alert the parents of a patient that just got in huh? I called Siya who came to pick me up right away.

Him: what happened?

I was about to respond when my phone rang

and it was Asemahle.

//Me: Mahle

Her: Derrick has been admitted to Shepston hospital. I didn't get all the details but mom and I are on a flight back to South Africa as we speak

Me: thanks for letting me know

Her: sure//

Her voice was breaking like someone who was holding back tears.

Him: everything ok?

I shook my head. Nothing about this was ok.

Me: he's in Shepston hospital.

Him: sure

He didn't ask any further questions; it was already past 5pm. We got to the hospital an hour and a half later and we found his father there. He was sitting in the reception waiting

room. I had texted That to meet me at the hospital instead and he agreed, he gave me the phone whose screen protector was as bad as mine and I thanked him. Siya and I greeted Mr Bess who told us that Derrick wasn't badly injured. He had a head injury, sprained leg and a broken arm which to me sounded pretty bad. He asked that they transfer his son to Durban's best hospital and they did just that... perks of being Damon Bess's son. We got to the hospital his Aunt works in and he was allocated a room. The last time we spoke was back in Shepston when we were greeting each other and that was as far as it goes. Melo was sleeping, seemingly the drugs they gave him knocked him right out. Siya decided to break the ice.

Him: did they tell you what happened?

Bess: They say a truck smashed into this other car which swerved into his making him hit a pole with his side of the car. Apparently it was a terrible accident.

Him: damn.

Bess: yep Damn. He's going to be ok Yandiswa.

I just nodded. I didn't really need assurance, Melo is a fighter anyway but what my problem was is that had I not been arguing with him in the first place, he wouldn't be here today. It was around 7pm when the doctor came to tell us that he was awake and we could go in and see him. I literally ran to his room and jumped on him.

Him: I see who would be sitting on the mattress on the floor if I was dead.

I hit him playfully

Me: you scared me

"We glad you're awake son"

We were disturbed by Mr Bess's voice which was as bold as Melo's. I tried to break the hug but young Bess wasn't letting go of my grip.

Me: Hayi Melo

Him: I'm not letting you go. Join me in Bed

He whispered in my ear

Siya: if this is how you guys are going to be, then dad and I might as well leave you guys to it

We laughed and so did Mr Bess.

Bess: they missed each other, its allowed

I giggled in embarrassment. I got ontop of the bed next to him and he snuggled me with his free arm, the other one had cement on it

Siya: aren't you hurting him?

Him: nah I'm good. I just want to get out of this place

Dad: what is it with you people and hospitals?

Melo: well you've never been in one so you wouldn't understand

Dad: right... Your mom and sister are on their way

Melo: it's really not that bad dad. They don't

have to fly here; I'm getting out tonight anyway

Me: says who?

Melo: me. I'm sick of being here. I want my bed

Siya: it hasn't even been a day. Relax!

Dad: you not going anywhere until the doctor discharges you Melo. At least stay for the week

Melo: no ways dad. I will go mad!

Me: would it hurt!

Melo: Yaya will take care of me... how's that?

I looked up at him and he had a serious place.

Dad: you know your mother wouldn't have that. Let's just here what the doctor says first and then we'll take it from there

I watched this two go back and forth and both of them were just as stubborn as the other, I finally saw where he got his stubbornness from... oh and his mom too.

Melo: fine. A day

Me: 3 days' max

Dad: yes, Yandiswa is right. you need to recover properly!

Siya: I totally agree with them

He was cornered.

Him: fine.

Dad: I'll talk to your doctor and see how badly injured you are and we'll take it from there

Him: mom has really ruined you

He said rolling his eyes. The doctor came in to tell us that visiting hours were over. He was not so happy with me sleeping with the patient but this stupid patient had it his way or no way at all. Dr gave up and let me sleep on the bed with him for the rest of the night. I woke up before him and went home to wash. When I came back 2 hours later he was with his mom and sisters. Mrs Bess gave me a big hug when she saw me walk in the rest followed

Melo: where did you disappear off to?

Me: I had to go shower and change my clothes

I kissed his cheek but he pulled me in for a real kiss

Mom: Ahem. Mother in the room.

We broke it.

Ase: they've missed each other mom... like you and dad

Iya: yep... you not one to talk

Mom: oh shut up! I spoke to your doctor and he said you will be out tomorrow later and you coming home so I make sure you recover accordingly.

Melo: you kidding me right?

Mom: you either stay here and recover or you come recover at home. Your choice

Melo: this is not fair.

Ase: you know she's impossible bruh

Iya: yep so just give in

He looked at me

Him: I'm sure you also have something to add

I shook my head. We had meaningless conversation until everyone else left and I was left with just him. His phone rang.

//Him: hello

.....

Him: listen I'm in hospital at the moment

.....

Him: I was in a car accident. nothing serious

....

Him: I'm fine Kate. Friday morning?

.....

Him: I'll talk to Asemahle and she'll give you my card

...

Him: bye//

He looked at me probably trying to read my expression but I wasn't about to act like a jealous girlfriend. I kept quiet.

Him: please come seat here

He said patting on the bed. I did as told and went to seat where he asked me to. he took my hand into his, he had a serious face. My mind literally went to being dumped for Kate. She's HOT! I wouldn't blame him; she was flames no doubt.

Him: Yaya Kate is pregnant

I kept quiet. I remembered a conversation we once had about him pregnanting (if such a word exists) someone and how it would be the end of us because I am not cut out for baby mama drama. Ok not every baby mama brings about drama but I don't think I would be strong enough to play step mom, I love kids and all but at this point in my life I am not ready for that,

I'm way too young. I pulled my hand away from his.

Him: please just hear me out.

It felt like a spear had just pierced right into my heart. It hurt so much.

Him: it was before you and I happened Yaya I swear. And to top it off she's not keeping it

I didn't hear whatever he said after the aborting part. What did this mean really? Why would they decide on abortion? It's wrong. The child has no sin. They are the ones that committed the sin. Abortion in my eyes is just wrong no matter the reasons, it's just wrong. The baby deserves life. I pulled my hand from his and he let go of his grip.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES

LOVE*

.

.

44 – Melo

As if things couldn't be worse my stupid injuries started acting up... just great! My girlfriend had walked out on me. She didn't say anything, she just left me sitting on that bed as if she heard me say I murdered someone. Call me an ass but she was being unreasonable, I needed her and she was pulling such stunts on me. Kate has her mind made up about aborting and there's no reasoning with her on this. I get it, she doesn't want to disappoint the people she loves and then there's the school thing but I can take care of her, Mrs. Bess won't be happy about it that's for sure but she will understand and lend a helping hand. I called Yaya but her phone went straight to voicemail. I don't know how many voicemail messages I left her before

giving up. I tried getting some sleep but nothing so I texted my twin to come visit me, and she came at lunch time with lunch.

Her: so where is the future Mrs. Bess?

Me: She's gone

Her: did you guys fight?

Me: don't scold me for what I'm about to tell you, the last thing I need is an Amahle Bess right now

Her: it will depend on what you have to say

Me: Kate is pregnant

She couldn't hide her shock. She was about to speak when I continued... "she's aborting it this Friday"

Her: What? Derrick are you serious?

I nodded

Me: I've tried getting her to keep it but she doesn't want to hear any of that, her mind is

made up on aborting it

Her: it's your baby too Melokuhle

Me: but it's her womb

Her: Yeses Melokuhle how could you be so careless? Ever heard of this thing called a condom? When did this even happen huh? Did you think of Yaya when you were screwing your ex without a condom Melokuhle? You can be such an asshole yeses!

And there my twin goes being all mom on me when I asked her nicely not to be. She was mad and I don't even understand why she was mad. She's not the pregnant one here and she's busy throwing tantrums.

Me: may I speak now?

She nodded.

Me: first of all, it happened before Yandiswa and I started dating, that day at Lu's party when Kate and I had disappeared... well at least that's

when I think it happened. You make it sound like I asked for this Asemahle.

Her: you did when you flippin had sex without a condom. What did you expect of it huh? A celebratory gift or a unicorn maybe? You know the consequences Melokuhle

Me: you don't need to shout; I can hear you perfectly

Her: so is this why Yandiswa left?

I nodded

Her: do you blame her? Cause I don't.

Me: Melody could you please just this once be my sister and not be mom. I know I screwed up ok, I know. And if I could turn back time I promise you I would but I can't, my back is against the wall here.

Her: ok ok fine. I'm sorry, I can't help but think of Mom's reaction to the whole situation

Me: yeah well I'm already over it seeing that you

played her role so damn well

She hit me on my injured shoulder.

Me: OUCH!

Her: so what? You just going to let her go through with it?

Me: do I have a choice really?

Her: yes, convince her not to go through with it

Me: what about her education?

Her: she should have thought if that when she had sex without a condom

Me: come on Mel

Her: my back is against the wall too Melo. I really don't know what to do or say in this situation. I can't help you out with this one bro and even if I were to talk to Yaya for you, what are the chances of getting through to her? She's disappointed Melo, you were reckless

She was right. I just nodded

Me: this stays between us Mel. Please! Not even Iya can know seeing what she went through

Her: you have my word. The last thing I would want to share is you agreeing to your ex aborting your child

Me: your sarcasm is charming twin.

Her: I just wasn't expecting this Melo ok. This is a bomb ok! And you can't convince her to keep it?

I shook my head. I've tried ok. I've begged her countless times but she doesn't want to hear anything. I didn't beg her because I want the baby or anything but I begged her because abortion is dangerous and it may come with complications in future, complications she may never recover from and I don't want that for her. I'm not ready for a child myself but if its already here then I don't see why not take responsibility for it? I just wish Yandiswa could understand, I

know she's not ready for such but I need her.

.

.

-Asemahle

Seeing my twin hurting was probably the most painful thing I've experienced, well apart from having to lose my grandparents and the time Yana lost her baby, you need to understand; I've never experienced boyfriend heartbreak before but I'm pretty sure it was as painful as this. I wanted to pull him to my chest and tell him that everything was going to be ok. I think his main concern was Yaya, my brother has loved before but he's never been attached as he was to Yaya. He lived for her, as much as their relationship was new but my brother loved her that much. Love like that I've only ever seen it from mom and dad so this thing of theirs was just beautiful to me and it made me crave for love... speaking of love, I met a guy back in

Amsterdam. He's from South Africa too and he was there for holidays as well, he was 24 and he was a Business Analyst.

Me: your life is depressing bruh

Him: tell me about it.

Me: so I met this guy

He looked at me and chuckled. Trust my brother to laugh, his laugh was annoying and irritating. But then again who could blame him for laughing? He never thought he would live to see the day where I actually utter those words.

Him: is he real?

Me: the fuck? Of cause he's real

Him: I mean can anyone else see him either than you twinny

I rolled my eyes.

Me: ok. I am out of here

Him: relax I'm joking. So you were saying

Me: his name is Sean and he is a junior Business Analyst at some company in Joburg

Him: your first relationship and it's a long distance one?

He said in the most irritating sarcastic tone. As much as I hate it but he had a point.

Me: should I leave?

Him: you know I'm just pulling your leg Sis. So tell me are you guys dating or what?

Me: I don't know... I guess you could say that. He intimidates me Rick

Him: ncoooah someone is in love. That's so cute

Me: seriously

Him: yes, seriously. So when will you two hook up?

He said giving me that naughty smile of his... he was talking about sex.

Me: you know very well I won't do that

Him: you want to have kids someday right?

Me: someday... yes

Him: yeah well you have sex in order to be able to have a child Melody. As your brother I'll tell you this, sex is the best thing Ever, well with the right person of cause. Anyway, don't rush into anything ok.

Me: is you giving me relationship advice?

We both laughed.

Him: of cause. If I don't, who will? You my only twin here and the last thing I want is you making decisions you'll later regret

Me: are we still talking about me here or we've moved on to you?

He chuckled. This thing was really stressing him out ey and I felt sorry for my brother. We continued talking with me telling him about my boyfriend and he was happy for me. When

visiting hours were over I decided to pay Yaya a visit. Not on behalf of Melo but because I wanted her to see reason. I got to her place and she opened for me and I drove in the yard. I went inside and she looked like she had been crying. I just pulled her in for a hug and led us to a couch in the lounge. She broke out of my arms.

Me: how are you?

Her: good

Me: Melo told me...

Her: what do think I should do?

Me: I can't tell you what to do but if I were you I would hear him out. He didn't send me here by the way but I feel like you being unreasonable here because he didn't cheat on you, it happened before you came in the picture and if this will be the end of you guys then the love you think you had for my brother is not as strong as you think of it have been

Call me judgy or whatever but it is what it is ok. if you love someone, such things wouldn't break you. They would make you stronger.

Her: I don't know what you implying but I love Melokuhle

Me: you got into this relationship with both feet knowing very well that such things may come up in the long run, except this time it came up sooner than expected. My point here is that you knew his past but you still dated him anyway. I know for sure that its once crossed your mind that he might have a baby somewhere but it still didn't stop you from being with him because you love him

She nodded

Me: where is that love now that he needs you? Kate has her mind made up about Aborting the child and there's literally nothing Melo could do about it here. He needs you Yaya

Her: how am I supposed to be there for him?

I've never been in this situation before. I don't know how to handle such

Me: now isn't that the beauty of it all huuh? You've both never been in this situation before but you can both walk through it together. I know you love my brother and I know he loves you. You know he told me how he came about to be in an accident

She flushed in embarrassment.

Me: I know you guys were fighting over him not telling you this over the phone. As injured as he was, you know who he was worried about? You Yaya. he didn't care about his injuries; all he knew is that he needed to get to you despite everything because he loves you Yandiswa. Something like this is not something to be told over the phone

She nodded. For the first time I was the one with the advice and Yaya was the speechless one... crazy turn of events if you ask me.

Her: I hear you

Me: that guy loves you dude

Her: hahaha you've told me more than enough to last me forever babe

My brother and Yaya were a match made in heaven and I would hate for this to be the end of them. Plus I love Yaya and I think she would make the perfect sister in law _ ... We continued chatting, I told her about Sean and she was happy for me. She asked me to drop her off at the hospital at Melo and I did just that then I drove home.

.

.

-Melo

I was woken up by my phone feeling the need to go and pee, as much of a struggle it was getting off the bed I found a way to do it myself. I refuse to look weak. I saw her sleeping on the

chair looking beautiful as usual. I hate that I put her in this situation but I was glad she was here because then it meant she was willing to hear me out. I tried getting off without alarming her and I succeeded, I went to the loo and when I came back she was awake.

Her: for a second I thought you were dead

Me: hahahaha very funny Yaya. it will take more than This-I waved my free arm to my injured side- to kill me

Her: how are you thou?

Me: I'm dealing... I can't wait to get out of this place

Her: of cause. But I meant the Kate thing

Me: I don't know honestly. She's going through with it and there's nothing I can do about it

Her: you do realise that someday this will all come back to haunt you, you will hate yourself for not trying hard enough to stop her.

Me: I know babe. Trust me I know and the last thing I want is to live with regrets for the rest of my life

Her: try reason with Kate. The child she is carrying is yours as much as it is hers. This is not her decision alone

Me: I've tried Yaya. I really have but she told me about how she doesn't want to disappoint her mother who is struggling already with her, her brother and grandmother. A baby is just baggage she doesn't need...

Her: even so babe, it won't be her baggage to take care of. I mean you have the means to take care of the child

Me: try convincing her all of that babe. I've tried and failed dismally. She just doesn't want this child

She nodded slowly. We were both laying in bed with her on my chest. I didn't think she would stand by me but here she was convincing me to

convince my ex to keep our baby... if she was not another version of mom then I don't know who was. I didn't deserve her at all!

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

45

Sometimes I surprised myself. What kind of idiot would convince their boyfriend to convince his ex to keep their child huh? Me. That's who. I'm such an idiot. Hopefully my idiotness pays off someday. Melokuhle had better put a ring on my finger someday for being such an amazing girlfriend. I deserve it even if I say so myself. Bae and I spend the rest of the night chatting

about our holidays and how much we missed each other, such a pity we couldn't show each other just how much but as soon as that cement comes off best believe we won't sleep... which will be 6 weeks to 8 from now. Sucks right? But it's all for the best. I took an uber to my place to go and wash up, as I was coming out of yard about to request an uber, a car pulled up in front of the yard. Ok... the door opened and you won't guess who rocked up out of it. It was my ex... the one that broke my heart? Remember him? The guy that broke up with me because I wouldn't lose my virginity to him. The same guy who posted a picture of us and told the whole world that he was single now and he was ready to mingle in my expense by the way. Yes, you guessed it, it was my asshole of an ex; Zuko. He came over to me and attempted to hug me but I just looked at him.

Last time I saw him; things didn't go so well ey. I actually met him this past holidays and you

wouldn't guess what happened. This was how our conversation went

Zuko and I were talking about his suicide thoughts this past year and how the big city was just taking its toll on him. He was depressed no doubt. We had mostly been talking about his WhatsApp statuses and how depressing they were to read. He wasn't happy and it kind of bothered me no lie, I cared about despite our past, I still cared.

Me: You know how to make people happy. There's more to you than that. Don't let depression cloud who you truly are

Him: I know but who's going to save me when I need saving?

Me: you have friends, family

Him: You know I bottle my emotions, I can go out there and make people happy and come

back home and when I'm alone I start thinking about my problems and feel like not talking to anyone and turn off my phone.

Me: Zuko

Him: This is not the time and place for all this.

Me: When is the time and where is the place? I'm not being cocky or anything but I think I'm the one person you seem to be willing to actually talk because I understand you. All of you. A lot may have changed kodwa I'll always be here for you. I think I once told you to put your emotions in a song

Him: I'll be ok man, don't make it a biggie.

Me: Its always been a biggie. I don't want you to drown in your emotions. Knowing you, you have someone who is willing to be there for you

Him: It's just a phase Yandiswa chill your tits down

Me: Stop being an ass! Kanene awuqhelanga

ukwaziwa kangaka yintombi (oh right how could I forget, you not used to being known this well by a girl)

I knew Zuko like the back of my hand but sometimes he did things that surprised even me.

Him: Nawe stop being too serious.

Me: I can't. This is serious tshii! Ok I'll let you be, on one condition thou

Him: Yes?

Me: Put your emotions in a song. Feel depressed? Write. Feel sad? Write. Feel happy? Write. I want you to put this in your music.

Him: Ayay! Captain. Let's go to my crib, this place is crowded

Me: what? No.

Him: come on Yands please just come through to the crib

Me: Lol no ways. I'm here mos with you, is that not enough?

Him: please Yandi

Me: get laid unintentionally? No thanks

Him: Lol what do you mean unintentionally? Dude.

Me: Lol you know exactly what I mean. You and me behind closed doors... look at the day I lost my virginity

Him: Lol that was unintentional, tomorrow doesn't have to be

Me: Nooooooh thanks I'm good

Him: Yands, please come thru

Me: I'm sorry but no ways dude

Him: You know we haven't had time to be together and bond again, tomorrow can be that day... You and me again

Me: Pleading doesn't suit you. Besides we

bonding now

Him: Hahaha I know right, it sucks

Me: You don't have to beg nje...

Him: I do, when I really want something. And that is you to be with me tomorrow

Me: Except it won't happen

Him: Yaya please

Me: sorry bruh

Him: Why won't you come?

Me: You know exactly why...

Him: Because you don't want to get laid? That's it?

Me: No... cause I have a boyfriend

Him: You have a boyfriend?

He asked sounding shocked which only annoyed me really because my Melo is on my Instagram and he was my current profile picture

on WhatsApp. Ok the picture looked like it had been downloaded so I don't blame him for thinking it was some celebrity crush because Melo looked the part ey.

Me: mxm!

Him: fine

We had another conversation until we decided to call it a day, that day we didn't chat on WhatsApp or whatsoever, he ignored my texts and I let him be because I really didn't need him in my life and him making me feel bad for not wanting to go to his home with him. I woke up to this text after having rejected going to sleep over at his place

"funny, I heard the most surprising news, that you had a boyfriend which I always suspected... So while I was being ignored all those months you were busy with your new formed love and now everything makes sense. The least you could have done was give me a heads up you

know but hey things have a funny way of coming out. You have a life of your own and I don't really blame you. I hope y'all are still together and pushing, he's not bad thou. I saw I picture of you two”

Now I know I shouldn't have been socializing with my ex seeing that I have a new boyfriend and all but he wanted to clear the air and apologize for pretty much everything and like a fool I agreed to meet up with him over lunch. From there on we developed some sort of friendship or at least that's what it seemed like to me until the text and then he blocked me on WhatsApp... how childish can one be right?

So yeah that was the last time I heard from him.

Him: Yandi I am sorry for the way things went between us

Me: I'm over it Zuko. What's done is done

Him: Yandi please just hear me out

Me: no Zuko you hear me out. I told you I had a boyfriend, you've seen that I have a boyfriend but you still played yourself for a fool and pretended that it was me being crazy me as usual. I don't blame you really because maybe I have made you feel that way. This cycle of ours and stuff, you screw up, apologize, and I let you right back into my life. It's been that way and it still was that way but I'm done with it Zuko. Its draining for me. you have a life in Joburg and I have a life here, lets respect each other please

Him: Yandi I can't let you go. You my coconut, always have and always will be

I chuckled in disbelief. Was this guy hearing himself?

Me: was, past tense. You have a girlfriend whom you've been flashing on Instagram and your WhatsApp Zuko, she's your coconut now and not me

Him: can we not talk about her. Yandi you know I love you and I never stopped, I'll never stop. I was childish and stupid and immature, I've grown up now and I swear to you things will be different this time around. No more pain.

Me: funny you should say that because there is no this time around. I didn't understand the emotional pain you put me through but it seemed to pay off. I guess it's true when they say With Pain Comes Love because the guy I am with now will never hurt me the way you did. I aint even mad anymore, I'm just irritated by you and I want to leave

Him: so that's it, you've given up on us just like that

Me: Zuko focus on your girlfriend, it's the best thing you'll ever do.

Him: Yandi I won't give up on us

Me: well then best of luck with that. While you busy not giving up, I should go and see my

boyfriend. He's probably panicking

Him: you enjoying this huh?

Me: not really, it's just pathetic

I said with a shrug then requested an uber which came in less than two minutes. I got on and asked he drop me off at the hospital. He was getting discharged today and he was going to his home, Ase was fetching him. I got to the hospital and Mr. was already packed waiting on his sister and me... I hugged him and we shared a kiss

Him: you've been gone for a very long time

Me: on my way out I ran into Zuko

Him: the ex-boyfriend that lives in Joburg?

Me: yep him, he was busy confessing his feelings and stuff

Him: I hope you didn't entertain him this time around

Melo knows I met up with him this past December and he was not so happy about it, he didn't talk to me for hours but he finally gave in, by the time I went to bed he and I were on good speaking terms but he asked that I never entertain him again, he was an ex and he should stay there. We didn't need to be friends.

Me: I didn't babe. He cornered me leaving no option but to listen to his crap, busy asking me for stupid love back as if I would ever get back together again with him

He smiled.

Him: that's my girl. You so adorable when you mad

Me: I'm not mad, I'm irritated by what I had to endure babe

I kissed the side of my head.

Him: sorry babe.

Just then Ase walked in with his prescription

and her purse that looked like mine in her hand.

Her: don't you two get tired of each other. You slept here with him every day Yaya

I looked at her and smiled

Him: you'll understand when you start having sex

I couldn't help but laugh. My boyfriend was always ready with an answer; it was annoying if you ask me.

Her: don't tell me you two have been having sex in the hospital

She said looking disgusted.

Him: if I didn't have these stupid things on my arm and leg then we would have. It's probably the only place we haven't experimented

I hit his uninjured arm.

Him: OUCH!

Ase: thank you. I didn't not need to know that

Melo. Now I need to count where I seat or eat in your flat

We looked at each other and he flashed me that naughty smile of his that was a major turn on for me by the way.

Her: oh wow! Just wow you guys. You two are addicts

Me: it's all him

Him: sex is a mutual thing honey.

Ase: can we just leave before you guys get any ideas.

She said walking out. I took his bag but my stubborn boyfriend whom I love dearly wasn't having that, he carried his own bag. His car was in for repairs, it wasn't that bad really but lucky him he had the i8 to go with. When he got in an accident he was driving his Aston Martin. We got to Ase's car and she drove off to her home with us. On the way we were busy picking on

Ase about her having a boyfriend and her relationship being a long distance one.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

46 – Melo

As much I wasn't happy that I would be staying at the mansion because it meant mom will be all up in my face 24/7, I was glad that I was leaving the hospital. We got home and the family was all there, mom was preparing something to eat, it smelt heavenly. She was a good cook no doubt but she was nothing compared to dad, who barely cooked for us. Yaya helped me inside and she helped me sit on

the couch, I was in pain but I was not about to give them reason to send me back into that hell hole and have every one of them treating me like a baby who can't do anything for himself. My good looks were still there but now I had scars here and there. That accident screwed me up, I was literally at the wrong place at the wrong time. My love for Yandiswa Gxaba will be the death of me I swear, if she wasn't mad at me then I wouldn't have been driving to Mthatha in the first place... ok maybe I would have been but not on that day. Next time I won't be so lucky. She did apologize for being mad and she also apologized for being in this situation, she blamed herself for it but I told her it wasn't her fault because I believe that if something is meant to happen then there's no stopping it, even though some of you may argue and say that nothing is written on stone but we can't change reality. If we could then death wouldn't exist. Anyway she helped me sit down and I

pulled her onto my lap.

Her: come on Melo. Respect your parents please

Me: have you any idea how much I have missed you Yaya

I said kissing her cheek. This cement needed to get off already. I needed my damn arm in this situations. She got off me and who am I to fight when I have one working arm.

Her: I'll go see if your mother needs help

Me: seriously? I didn't bring you here for my mother Yandiswa

Her: you didn't bring me here at all

She said laughing and walking away. This girl. Always ready with an answer. My big sister walked in and kissed my cheek then sat next to me.

Her: how are you?

Me: coping. This shiit hurts like a moth..

“language!” that was dad’s voice. I rolled my eyes.

Dad: had you stayed in the hospital like you should have....

Me: spare me the lecture dad please. That place gives me creeps

Iya: then its time you stopped watching those horror movies... wouldn’t you agree?

Me: seriously guys.

Iya: yeah... seriously. So when are theses coming off?

Me: don’t know... but I want then off already

Dad: tough luck son

Me: aren’t you supposed to be at work?

Dad: nah, figured you were coming back and I didn’t want to miss this...

Me: miss what?

Him: you whining like a little baby.

He and Yana both laughed at me.

Me: one day is one-day dad.

Him: ncooooh aren't you the cutest thing

I threw a pillow at him and he caught it laughing.

I pushed Iya who just laughed at me even harder. They could be so annoying when they wanted too. You could even go as far as saying I hated them... well at that moment, I love my family. I ended up laughing myself.

“come on share the joke” Ase walked in with her phone in her hand. This thing of her's having a boyfriend was going to be trouble I can already see it!

Dad: we just making fun of your brother. He's whining like a little baby

Me: I'm not! This is painful dad; I was in an accident 3 days ago ok!

Ase: 2 and a half twin. Had you sta....

Me: ha.a... don't start with me

Iya: where were you off to anyway? You were picked up in Oribi plaza

Ase: he was going to get laid

I looked at her with that "seriously" look

Her: don't look at me like that. You know I'm right!

Me: thanks Asemahle

Her: you welcome

Dad: and you couldn't wait for her to come back maybe?

Me: she's lying. Yaya was mad at me and I wanted to fix things

Iya: what did you do?

Me: none of your business

Dad: this girl has you by the balls huh?

Me: I thought we were minding our language

Dad: I didn't swear

Me: there's still kiddie ears around here

Dad: who's a kid here?

Me: your precious daughter. I bet she doesn't even know how they shaped.

I said laughing and so did Iya. She threw a pillow at me annoyed... Karma is a b*tch...

Ase: whatever Derrick

Dad: you still a virgin honey?

He said looking shocked and so was his tone which only made Yana and I laugh very hard

Ase: why do you sound shocked?

Him: probably because you're a rare breed. I never want to imagine you guys having sex, no father ever wants to but when Iya fell pregnant it made me wonder about you... I lost all hope on you being a virgin... and then there's the lifestyle you lead... you can't blame me baby

I couldn't help myself. I was in stitches. Dad was throwing so much shade on his little princess.

Ase: nice one dad. I'll sleep with the next guy I meet just to make you proud

Me: I will murder you!

Dad: you know I didn't mean it like that. I'm glad you still a virgin baby, stay like that. These boys aren't good. Look at your brother for instance. Had he been a good boyfriend then he wouldn't be sitting on my couch like he is now

Me: seriously dad? Why are we suddenly talking about me? you were better off throwing shade at Melody

Iya: you're a typical example of a bad boy. You the perfect example of why our sister should stay away from boys

Me: yeah well you have to kiss a dozen frogs before you find your prince charming now

Dad: which she won't. She doesn't need a prince charming when she has a king to do everything for her

Iya: does that mean you don't want her to get married?

Dad: if it were up to me, none of you guys would get married. These boys of today don't know how to treat a woman right

"that's right baby. Derrick take down some notes" mom said walking in with a tray of snacks and Yaya walking behind her with drinks on a tray. They put them on the table.

Mom: they think that all girls want is money and that's it. Girls need more than that, they need love, attention, your time, support... and a whole lot more

Me: but mom that's what I'm doing for Yaya... babe come to my rescue please

She smiled showing off her perfect white teeth.

Yaya: he's a good guy

Me: I'm the perfect guy.

Iya: if you were, you wouldn't be like this... scar face and all

Mom: what am I missing?

Ase: he was driving to Mthatha when he got in an accident to apologize

Yaya looked down and sipped on her drink...
Asemahle and Iyana thou! Sometimes I just wish I could duct tape their mouths.

Mom: why? What did you do? Yandiswa what did he do?

I looked at Yaya. She had to think of a lie. The last thing I want is them knowing about the pregnancy and the upcoming abortion. Mom would skin me alive. The way she's emphasized using a condom during sex, telling her Kate is pregnant was definitely a no-go area.

Yaya: he uuhmm. He wasn't answering my calls

Mom: why?

Yaya: it was a misunderstanding. Given his history and all, it's kind of hard to just assume that he was doing something important... you know that type of thing

Phew! Nice save. I winked at her.

Me: and this is why I didn't tell you guys about my relationship with Yandiswa. You like to meddle

Mom: I wasn't meddling

Iya: but you kind of were mom. What they argue about is really not any of our business.

Mom: ok. I'm sorry, it won't happen again. It's just that I don't want you hurting this child Melo. She is one of a kind

Me: and I know that mom which is why I wouldn't dare dream of hurting her. I love her mom

I don't think mom has ever heard me say I love

a girl. You can imagine the look on her face and the rest of the family.

Iya: somebody is growing up. 20 suits you little one

Me: shut up and pass me my drink please. It's a little too hot in here

Dad: of course it would. You just declared out love that you're in love

Me: you guys are making my girlfriend nervous. Please stop already

Knowing Yaya, her palms were probably sweating. I know my girl. She may be an artist but she is not a fan of being put on the spot. Her phone rang and she asked to be excused.

Me: see what I mean.

Mom: she'll be fine. You really love her...?

Me: you have no idea mom. I'm going to marry her someday, just watch

Dad: I'm proud of you son

Mom: so am I baby

Iya: you guys are the most weirdest parents.

She said sipping on her drink. She was right though, conversations with our parents weren't like any other child-parent conversation, they were different. It was like you chatting with your friends, it took years to build this kind of relationship with them. The only time they turn on you and become like any typical parent is when you force them to be. Screw up and you will see their true colors.

Iya: so what were you and Yandiswa talking about?

Mom: none of any of ya'lls business

Me: should I be worried?

Her: is there a reason you should?

Me: really mom?

Yaya walked in and sat down, she was sitting next to Asemahle on a three seater couch with mom.

Me: so what were you and I mom talking about?

Yaya: none of your business

Mom: marry this one baby. She is perfect

We all laughed. Mom was something else, it's no surprise that she and Yaya got along so well... they were pretty much the same, attitude and all... well not 100% the same but you get my point, their personalities were similar. But Yaya wasn't as strong as my mom, no woman was as strong hearted as my mother was, this woman has been through hell and back ok. She was molested by her nanny as a child until she was 7, she walked in on her first boyfriend having sex with someone whom the dude had claimed was nothing but a friend and then she later found out she and the dude were actually cousins, her best friend slept with her boyfriend

then and fell pregnant with Iya but look at her today, she forgave Aya for what she did and they became friends again, she was the only one who survived in a plane crash with my grandparents, she had a miscarriage and she is still standing... I could go on and on about my how great of a woman she is and how I only pray that Yaya turned out like her. We had a great chat and everyone was enjoying themselves. Mom offered Yaya to sleep over but refused her offer so she was driven to her place by one of the drivers. In all honesty I wasn't comfortable with her sleeping in that big house alone, Ledi and Anita weren't back yet and then there's this asshole of an ex of her's who's in town... nothing good ever comes out from such but I trust her, she wouldn't do me like that.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:24] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

47

Knowing Derrick Melokuhle Bess he was probably worried that I was meeting up with Zuko. On the way home he kept calling me every two minutes, it was annoying if you ask me. I never took him for the insecure type but here he was acting insecure over nothing, I didn't want Zuko, I was DONE with the guy. My little sister was sleeping over, I asked the driver that we pass by the Bashe residence so that we can pick her up. It was already late, well around 8pm. The Bess's didn't want to leave ey... they are a great family and you can't not love them YOH! We parked and I got off and went inside the yard, my heart started pounding, i've never

been here before. I got to the door and my palms started sweating like, I was suddenly hot. I knocked and a very cute coloured boy opened the door, they had a beautiful house, probably a four bedroom home or maybe 5, it was a beautiful home. He greeted me with a cute smile.

Him: i'm Christian...

Me: i'm Yandiswa... where' s Sino?

Him: in her room. Come wait for her this side.

I followed him as he led the way to what seemed like the lounge. His lookalike was watching TV alone.

Me: where are your parents?

Him: mom and dad are in their room. This is my twin Christopher, i'll go call Sino.

Me: cool. Nice to meet you Christopher.

Him: sure.

Christopher didn't seem so nice while his twin was an angel, bubbly and just a sweetheart. Basically Christian was the Asemahle and Christopher was Derrick between the two, all grumpy and stuff. Christian had disappeared down the hall. A beautiful old white woman, well she didn't look that old really but you get the point. She looked like she never gave birth, she was beautiful and skinny and just model looking. Must be the future Mrs.

Her: Hello, I didn't know we had company. I'm Caroline, you are?

You gotta understand, I look nothing like Thando!

Me: Yandiswa Gxaba

Her: my husband's daughter?

Just then Sino came to my rescue.

Her: hey you here. Why didn't you text me?

Me: I did actually... check your phone

She looked at it and smiled in embarrassment.

Me: see.

She nodded.

Sino: mom i'll be back tomorrow ok..

Car: wait. Yandiswa could you please come over for dinner tomorrow

I looked at her about to refuse her invite. I'm really not mentally ready to play happy family with the man who denied my mother all because he couldn't stand up to his father.

me: i.... uhmmm

Car: please Yandiswa... at least think about it and get back to me

Me: cool. Uhhm, goodnight, it was nice meeting you guys. You have a beautiful home.

I said walking out with Sino.

Her: well that seemed awkward!

We both shared a laugh. It was awkward ey. We

got inside the car and I directed the driver to my place. On the way she was telling me about her brothers. I was right, Christopher was the Derrick of the two and Christian was the Asemahle. Sino's other name was Christina and the boy's other names were Hlumelo and Hlumisa, Christian was Hlumelo and the other one was Hlumisa. We got to my place, he waited for us to get inside the yard before driving off... Mrs Bess's strict orders.

Sino: you are going to marry off to the best family EVER

Me: who said I'm going to get married to Derrick?

Her: I'm not 5

She said that part with a little bit of attitude, I just laughed at her.

Me: of cause you not...

Her: you love him?

Me: haha we not having this conversation

She was about to respond when my phone started ringing...

Me: I have to take this

I handed her the key while I answered my phone

//Me: I just got home

Him: where were you?

Me: I went to fetch Sino first

Her: Hey bro in-law

-she shouted for Melo to hear, he chuckled

Me: now do you believe me

Him: tell her I said hey sissy in law

Me: he says hey sissy in law

-she smiled as we walked inside the house

Him: so what are you two going to get up to?

Me: watch movies and do girly things... I don't know really; I've never had to bond with someone her age. What do you do with a high

school kid?

He laughed at me

Him: you kidding right?

Me: no seriously I have no idea

Him: she's 2 or three years younger than you.
What were you doing when you were her age?

Me: smoking weed...

Him: don't corrupt the child Yandiswa

Me: honestly babe. When I was her age I was
smoking weed and getting high

Him: well I would suggest movies with normal
non-alcoholic beverages, meni's and pedi's...
that sort of thing

Me: yes dad

I said rolling my eyes

Him: don't roll your eyes at me... I know you
already babe

Me: whatever. Her mother invited me for dinner tomorrow

Him: are you going?

Me: I don't know... should I?

Him: I think you should, they are your other family at the end of the day and you can't punish your siblings for what your father did 19 years ago babe.

Me: I don't know Melo.

I took a deep breath in and then let it out.

Him: my grandmother Sinobomi was adopted by the Ndalo's when she was born. She met her biological mother when she was 16, she was mad at her for leaving her at the hospital. She resented her mother for not raising her, she was angry at her for something she had done 16 years back. So when she had finally forgave her and was ready to actually spend some time with her biological mother Nosihle, Nosihle was

killed by the wife of Sino's biological father. Where I'm going with this is that life is short. People make mistakes, yes we don't understand why they did the things they did but when given the chance to forgive them and move past what's done, we ought to take that chance because you never know when that person might leave this earth

I kept quiet not knowing what to say. He made sense no doubt but I didn't know whether or not I was ready to forgive and forget.

Him: I'm not saying forgive and forget, all I'm saying is take baby steps. At the end of the day Rome wasn't built in one day. Go to the dinner and see where it goes from there

I smiled to myself thinking just how smart my boyfriend is. I was a lucky woman to have a boyfriend, father, brother, supporter, advisor and everything. Melo was EVERYTHING a boyfriend should be and more. I know it's only

been 2 months and a few weeks but if anything our relationship has taught me is that it's not about the amount of time you've known a person for them to be your everything.

Me: thank you

Him: for?

Me: everything. I really don't know where I would be without you in my life. It's only been two months but I feel like you changing me. you grooming me in ways I never thought were possible

He chuckled

Him: go spend time with your sister, we'll chat on WhatsApp ok

Me: tell me you love me first

Him: I love you Yandiswa Catalaya Gxaba

Me: Catalaya?

Him: it's a flower, a very beautiful rare one.

That's your English name from now on

I blushed

Him: it will be your name when we get married...
might as well be

I couldn't help but giggle

Me: ok... I love you Melokuhle. Bye now

Him: bye babe//

I went to the lounge all smiles. Sino was
watching a movie and it looked like it was in the
middle already

Her: couldn't wait for you busy being in love

Me: geeeez... really now?!

Her: yes, really. Look at you smiling like a retard
now

Me: uhhm ok... Can I get you snacks? Anything
to eat?

Her: snacks will do

Me: anything to drink?

Her: I'll drink whatever you drinking

Me: hahahah very funny little one. I will be having wine so pick something else

Her: fine... do you have Fanta grape?

Me: it's my fave

Her: awesome. I'll have that

I went to the kitchen and poured us drinks and poured snacks in a bowl then took the things to the lounge. I've been craving a good glass of wine since home. The only times I ever drank back in Mthatha was when my friends and I met up at spur or panarottis. In my mom's eyes I'm an angel who know's nothing about alcohol or weed or anything bad and I like to keep it that way.

Her: who do you live with?

Me: two of my friends

Her: isn't it chaotic? I mean don't you guys fight?

Me: we do but we able to sort out our differences properly

Her: whose bong is that?

She said pointing at the bong closed in the tv stand glass doors

Me: that is ours. What do you know about bongs?

Her: I wasn't born yesterday. My friends and I smoke weed

Me: do your parents know?

Her: I'm a PK... what are the chances of them knowing? Mom would murder me with her bare hands

Me: so when do you smoke?

Her: at sleep overs at my friend's places or when we attend Saturday classes

Me: and Derrick said I shouldn't corrupt you

I said to myself laughing in disbelief... yep, PK's are the total opposite of their parents. Well most of them.

Me: are you a virgin?

She shook her head.

Me: what?!

Her: it happened at this other party last year...

Me: what was your relationship with the guy Sino?

Her: he was some guy from Durban boys high. It just happened

Me: did you at least use protection?

Her: I'm not stupid Yaya. we used a condom, the last thing I need is a baby at this age. My parents would disown me

Me: in all honesty you shouldn't have lost your virginity to some random stranger. A girl's virginity is something sacred

Her: and boy's isn't right? I don't get why we supposed to keep ourselves for marriage while they get to hoe around for as long as they like... the scripture wasn't meant for us ladies only, it was meant for both genders

I just nodded. This was one debate I was clearly not going to win so I might as well drop it before it goes far. My sister was well spoken, she was not afraid to speak her mind and honestly that worried me. it's a good thing but it can also be a bad thing. We continued chatting getting to know each other, I told her about myself and how I'm the only child with a dozen cousins back in Eastern Cape. I left her watching another movie, I was sleepy so I decided to call it a night. I got a call from Asemahle asking me to go out with her tomorrow, she wanted to go shopping and have a girl's day out with a fellow girl close to her age either than Iya and I told her I was down. I mean there's nothing better do with Naledi not here.

The rest of my squad from DUT and I weren't as close as before, the drama between Lathitha and I and Anita and Emelia kind of broke us up in a way and I didn't really mind. I called Derrick before sleeping, we spoke for a while and then I got under the covers and we chatted on WhatsApp until Sino joined me in bed. She got in and we called it a night. the next day I woke up to breakfast in bed, after breakfast we lit a joint and smoked it together before going to shower. I actually told him about Sino and he didn't believe me, so while we were smoking I took a few good pictures with my camera... they actually came out better than I thought.

Because of my passion for photography, my room was white and it had the best view in the whole house thanks to Ledi. My room looked like one of those room you would find on those room décor magazines, my room colours were mostly white, charcoal and nude pink here and there while my bathroom was white and

turquoise with a little black. Sino couldn't shut up about our house, she even asked to live with me until my friends came back but all that was up to her parents.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:25] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

48 – Melo

Yaya was having dinner at her parents house later today, her step mom invited her over cause she wanted to meet her. At first Yaya wasn't up for the whole family thingy but after a lot of convincing, she went ahead with it. Tomorrow Kate was meeting up with Asemahle so she can give Kate my credit card. It's the only card I had

with me on my way to Yaya. I opted she goes for the suction rather than the pill, I feel it's safer and less riskier. What if she bleeds to death by taking the pill because I heard that one bleeds a lot when using the abortion pill. I got a call from Kate. I answered it same time, I was sitting in my room anyway.

//Me: hey

Her: hi

Me: how are you?

Her: I'm ok I guess... how are you?

Me: i'm getting there

Her: So what we doing about this whole abortion thingy?

Me: You should go book for the thingy. Is the booking half price or?

It was kind of hard to actually mention what it is she was going to do here. I mean she was getting rid of our baby as if I never mattered to

her for one single bit. I wasn't with it and I doubt I ever would, I had my regrets before it was even done. Should I be feeling like this? Yes I'm not ready for a child but abortion is a bit drastic even for me.

Her: Nope, you pay when you go and do the thingy... The full amount. You call, book an appointment and then go there with the money in full

Me: Ayt, you should probably book tomorrow. Melody will meet up with you and give you my card

Her: Then I'll call them in the morning because they perform abortions in the morning only

Me: Ayt....You sure you want to do this...?

Her: This creeps me out but It's something I have to do thou...

Me: We always got options, there's no such thing as 'have'. We chose to 'have'

Her: But this I have to... you know the reasons why I can't keep it

Me: The choice is all yours, just know you can outgrow disappointment, but not regret. As long as you know you going to be fine with the outcome.

Her: This is the last thing I need from you right now...

Me: What?

Her: You making me feel guilty about this before I've even went through with it

Me: No I'm not, I'm making you aware of what you want to go thru with, it's my duty to.

Her: Seriously...

Me: Yeeep, you wanted to go through it blind?

Her: Can you just stop. Melo we not together anymore, you don't owe me anything. So let's stop talking about this

Me: Nah I think it's better if we talk about it, it's about time you grow up Kate and handle some stuff. The reason why your mum treats you like a child is this... You act like you not old enough to handle the real world. You know what is the first thing you get told when you about to go to manhood...? and it's something you come back and live by when you old. "Look at what they going to do to you, pay attention. You might want to know later or get asked about it." simply means don't go through something scary without looking and learning. Because if you don't look you might come out of that without learning anything, most likely to repeat till you do. I'm telling you this because I care about you, and I never told that anyone. But I lost a lot of people I care about because I didn't say what needed to be said.

Her: Why are you only saying all this now? Why didn't you say this when I was at your flat the other day?

She sniffed in between. She was crying

Me: I'm sorry Kate..., I just didn't think of it that time. And you left in a hurry

Her: I can't do this with you Derrick

Me: fine. Asemahle will call you in the afternoon today... you going there tomorrow right?

Her: yes. Can't you just send the money to my account?

Me: it'll reflect later on your account. Just take my credit card, you'll give it to my sister or Yaya when you done with it. I'd be with you but I'm on bed rest for the next couple of weeks

Her: I understand. My friend will be there with me anyway.

Me: oh... Kate I'm sorry

Her: yeah... Me too

Me: I hope all goes well

Her: me too. Bye Derrick.//

She dropped the call on me and didn't even wait for me to respond... typical. I guess this is how things will be as of now, or we won't even talk... who knows what the future holds for us? I called Asemahle and she came after a while.

Her: what's up?

Me: I texted you Kate's number and please take my credit card from my wallet

Her: why don't you send her cash?

Me: we use different accounts, it will reflect later in her account.

Her: of cause. Where's your wallet?

Me: first drawer

The was a chest of drawers in my room opposite my bed. She went to it and looked through it and came out with my wallet.

Her: why would you keep your wallet with your underwear?

Me: because it's safer there

I said rolling my eye.

Her: o...k

She gave me my wallet and I searched for my card then gave it to her.

Me: please give her my card and don't say shiit to her about anything

Her: what could I possible say to her?

Me: you? There's like a dozen things I could think of. You are like your parents, you not scared to speak your mind about. And please meet her before you go to Yandiswa.

Her: now you going to dictate how I handle your women?

Me: Yandiswa might just convince Kate to keep the child, I know her

Her: you said it yourself. Kate has her mind made up with this. Why are you worried, thought

you didn't want a kid?

Me: I don't but I figured, it's already here so I might as well.

Her: i'll never understand you brother.

Me: you don't have to sweetie. Please don't go wild with my card

Her: I make no promises brother

She took my card and walked out laughing. Knowing Asemahle she was probably going to suck me dry and shop till she drops. I said my prayers. I went back on WhatsApp chatting with my girlfriend. She and Ase were having lunch today. After a while I went to wash and then made my way downstairs... it was a struggle really, I met up with mom coming out of her room

Her: you know you supposed to be in bed right

She said helping me go down the stairs

Me: how am I supposed to get better sitting in

bed all day?

Her: and how do you expect to heal getting out of bed?

Me: I'm not a child mom

Her: to me you are. You should move to one of the rooms downstairs, to be much safer. What if you fell on the stairs?

Me: mom really?

Her: yes, really. You going to sleep in one of the spare rooms until they remove the cement from your leg.

I was about to respond when she cut me

Her: it's not open for discussion Melokuhle. The last thing we need is you getting more injure than you are already.

Me: yes, mom

We got to the lounge and she helped me seat down before handing me the remote.

Her: so what are you going to eat?

Me: whatever you eating mom

Her: cereal it is

Me: I thought you were making real breakfast?

Iya walked in.

Iya: mornings... Where's Melody? She's not in her room

Me: she went to meet up with Yaya

Mom: isn't it a bit to early? Its only 10am. Did she at least eat something?

Me: they meeting up for breakfast and then going shopping or something... I don't know mom

Iya: ok... so what are we eating for breakfast?

Me: is it me or you've become a permanent resident of this house hold?

She hit me with a pillow while mom walked out.

Her: this is my home as much as its yours

Me: yeah but you have a place of your own now...

Her: what is your problem?

Me: nothing... if you were at your own place you wouldn't be worried about Melody and what she gets up to

She rolled her eyes and grabbed the remote from me then changed the channel and put on keeping up with the Kardashians or something... all I saw was one of the Kardashian sisters

Me: you've watched this thing already Iyana

Her: I know and I want to repeat it again

Me: you lucky I can't get up...

Her: and I plan to make the most out of this time.

Iyana was annoying when she wanted to. sometimes you would swear I was older and

she was younger. I let her be and just pressed my phone, she started channel hopping hoping to get my attention but I didn't want to entertain her. mom walked in.

Mom: Iya someone is here to see you

Just then Ngawo walked in... thank GOD! He greeted, Iya just looked at him blankly.

Iya: what are you doing here?

Him: can we talk privately?

Mom: I'll go finish up breakfast

She walked out

Iya: no you can talk in front of my brother.

The dude looked terrible. I see their break up left a huge hole inside of him, none that can be repaired. He was even skinny. It was sad really.

Him: I've been trying to call you

Her: what are you doing here?

Him: I just wanted to see you that's all

Her: why Kungawo?

Me: Yana please go talk to the guy outside...

She gave me a death stare.

Me: please Yana

She was hesitant but she asked that they walk out to talk by the pool. They both walked out to talk. I called mom and asked she pass me the remote, she did tell me not to move from the couch so she might as well. She gave me the remote before going back to the kitchen. After a while Iya and Ngawo walked in, she walked him out and came back and sat next to me and put her head on my shoulder.

Me: what's wrong?

Her: his mom died and her funeral is this Saturday

She said with her voice breaking

Me: how is he holding up?

She shrugged.

Her: she was all they had Derrick

Ngawo had a sister doing Matric this year. I pulled my sister in for a cuddle, she was hurting poor thing. She and her almost mother in law had a good relationship going on so it's only fair that she be sad. Ngawo's mom was not those monster in law type of moms to my sister. I let her cry on my chest.

.

.

-Asemahle

I called up Kate the minute I got in town and she answered after a while.

//Me: hi this is Asemahle, Derrick's sister

Her: oh hey....

Me: where are you?

Her: I'm at Res

Me: please catch a taxi to town

Her: ok I'm on my way//

I dropped the call and then called Yaya who said she was high and would come in town when the highness starts to wear off, I couldn't help but laugh at her... she and my brother were just the perfect match I swear. The stoner and Mr serious... I got a call from Kate telling me she was on a taxi to West street and where should she get off, I told her lets meet at MacD... I wanted their watermelon McFizz. I went there and bought it then waited for her to come. She walked in after 10 minutes or so.

Her: hey

Me: hi. Please seat

She took a seat.

Me: can I get you anything to eat? I heard pregnant people love food...

She shook her head.

Her: I just ate

Me: we both know that's not true Kate; my brother would kill me if I let you go without buying you something to eat

Her: I'm not your brother's problem

Me: if you weren't then you wouldn't be using his money to get an abortion

Excuse me for the attitude but she started it.

Me: so what can I get you to eat?

Her: anything is fine

Me: you pregnant, I'm pretty sure you have something you craving

Her: a big mac will do with coke

Me: was that so hard?

I got up and went to order the food for her and then came back with it.

Me: so why are you so determined to get rid of the baby?

Her: I just have to

Me: there's no such thing

Her: not all of us were fortunate enough to be born with a silver spoon in our mouths. I cannot afford a child, my family cannot afford to feed and extra mouth. Mom's salary is not enough to take care of me, my brother, my grandmother and herself.

I nodded

Her: I know you think I'm mean for wanting to get rid of this baby but it's something I need to do. I just can't disappoint my mother like this. she would disown me for this

Me: you were fortunate enough to sleep with Damon Bess's son though. You don't have to raise the child Kate

Her: and what about school?

Me: my parents can pay for your education

Her: wouldn't it be cheaper to get rid of the child

than to actually have you and your family catering to my every need?

I shrugged. My phone beeped indicating a message from Yaya saying she was on her way to town

Me: anyway, I'm not here to play no Dr Phil. I don't know your situation, you have your reasons and your mind seems made up already so I might as well just give you the reason we here.

I paged through my wallet and gave her a gold card. I told her the pin and she wrote it down.

Her: thank you. I'll bring it back straight after tomorrow

Me: so when are you doing this thing?

Her: tomorrow morning

Me: where?

Her: Marie Stopes

Me: is it safe?

Her: so I've heard

Me: are you sure about this Kate?

Her: I just have to Asemahle

I nodded.

Me: ok. enjoy your food and the rest of your day.

I took my bag and walked out while asking Yaya about her whereabouts and she told me she was almost there so I went to window shop at Sportscene while waiting for her. When she was finally in town, she called me and I told her to get off at Sportscene. We hugged and then we went to grab breakfast at Spur opposite.

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:25] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

49

I was still a bit high but I was stable... or at least I think I was. I called an uber for Sino who didn't want to leave... I also didn't want her to leave, she and I got along all too well. After she was gone I took a taxi to West street because that's where I was meeting Asemahle. She was at Sportscene busy looking at sneakers.

Me: you never struck me as a sneaker chick

She was wearing a sandal, a dress and a leather jacket. I on the other hand was wearing blue ripped boyfriend jeans, nude pink leather converse, white vest and a nude pink long sleeve cardigan.

Her: a girl can't always be in heels now

Me: good point. So what kind of sneaker you looking for?

Her: nothing today. I was just waiting for you that's all

Me: well then let's go eat. I'm hungry AF!

Her: you going to have to quit weed ey, my brother is not a fan of it

Me: I'm not going to quit weed because Melokuhle is not a fan... I'll need a better reason than that

Her: you so stubborn... like him

Me: that's why he and I get along so well.

We were at Spur sitting in a table for two. I ordered wings for starters. I was very hungry, weed was playing its part too in my hunger.

Her: right....

Me: so how's Kate?

Her: she's uhhmm... not handling things well

Me: I still don't get why she would go through with something like this. The baby didn't do

anything wrong to anyone

Her: trust me Melo and I have tried to get through to her but she has her mind made up. She mentioned something about how the child would be baggage to her family

Me: the baby has two parents. She doesn't have to keep it after birth

Her: my point exactly. Argh this is not any of our business so let's let things be. The parents of it came to an agreement

I nodded. I should be happy that my boyfriend is not having a child with another woman but I'm not. If Kate kept the baby, then they wouldn't have to have a relationship as per say but now they have something to bond over should they meet later in life. I mean Kate will need Derrick emotionally and I don't think I will be able to stand that. What if later in life they realize that they made a mistake and then one thing leads to another and they decide to have a baby?

Where would that leave me? Melo cares about Kate and I know very well that he will be there for her emotionally, Kate may try push him away but I know my Melo, he's persistent and does what pleases him. A year from now or a few months down the line one of them will regret getting rid of the baby. What happens when Kate can't get pregnant when she wants to get pregnant? She'll blame Melo for not trying hard enough to stop her from going through with the abortion.

"Yandiswa your phone"

I was brought back to reality by Asemahle. The weed was making me paranoid I swear!

Me: yes

Her: your phone

I looked at the screen and it was my best friend.
I answered

//Her: my favorite person in the whole world

Me: hey Ledi

Her: OUCH! Where's the excitement? Where's the love?

I laughed

Me: hey baby. How are you? My word I miss you

Her: now you just sound fake, tone it down a notch

Me: now you just annoying

Her: I just got to Durban. You home?

Me: nope, I'm out having breakfast with Asemahle

Her: bonding with the sister in law I see. Can I join you guys?

Me: I don't see why not. Lemme ask her. Ledi is asking if she can join us?

Asemahle gave me a smile before saying yes

Me: you can join us babe. Weren't you coming back with Anita?

Her: she's coming back when we open

Me: oh okay cool. We at Spur on West street

Her: on my way. Bye

Me: bye//

Ledi doesn't know about Kate being pregnant and aborting the baby. As much as she means well but I don't need her trying to convince me that I'm making a mistake by staying with Melo after this one incident. Knowing her she will probably tell me that this is the first of many and I don't need that in my life. As much as she is for my relationship with Melo, she's still a bit doubtful of Melo and his intentions... his past doesn't really sit well with her, especially with the stunt Lathitha pulled with Kate.

Me: seeing that Ledi is on her way here, can we not mention the Kate thingy. She doesn't know and I'd like to keep it at that

Her: why?

Me: Ledi tends to be judgmental and over protective and motherly...

Her: then my lips are sealed

Me: thank you.

Ase: are you ok?

Me: yeah I'm fine babe

Her: you sure?

Me: yeah I'm sure, it's the weed that's all

She shook her head and laughed at me. Just then Ledi walked in, I waved my hand at her and she walked over

Her: it's going to make you crazy

Me: yep but I aint quitting anytime soon.

Ledi: what are we talking. Hello beautiful people

She said kissing our cheeks and then taking her seat

Me: that I do some of my best work when I'm

high

Her: you kidding me right?

Ledi: she's telling the truth, it's weird but it works for her. Anyway I am starving. Have you guys ordered yet?

We had wings on the table with our drinks. I don't just take pictures, I also paint... well when I'm high and I am the best painter there is... when I'm high of course but either than that, my paintings are normal and dull without any emotion or story to tell. I guess I'm more into my emotions and feelings when I'm under the influence rather than I am when I'm completely sober. I'm a weird being.

Ase: not really, we were waiting for you

Me: and you took forever by the way

Ledi: and then what's wrong with you?

Ase: she smoked weed before coming here

Me: that was in the morning

Ledi: it's still morning

Me: I mean around 8am, its after 10 now

Ledi: whatever you smoked is strong ey.

Our waiter finally came over and took our orders, I ordered ribs, chips, onion rings and wings. Ledi ordered the same while Ase went for chicken and a salad... explains why she had a killer body.

Ledi: you a salad girl... what am I asking... of cause you are

Ase: I don't like eating fats before 1... that's just how I am

Me: wow... So Melo told me you have a boyfriend

Ledi: finally! Does that mean you ready to break your virginity?

Me: she just met the guy Ledi. So details

Ase: that brother of mine cannot keep his

mouth shut to you! I bet you know all the family secrets

We all laughed. She was right though, Melo couldn't not tell me things, be it intentional or unintentional... its all the same. He loves sharing things with me

Ledi: it's called pussy power babe. It works wonders

Ase: right... Anyway, no I am not losing my virginity anytime soon. I met the guy back in Amsterdam and we hit it off, he lives in Joburg and he is a great guy...

Ledi: your first real relationship and you go for a long distance one?

Me: I'm in a long distance

Ase: only when you in Mthatha... you don't really count because you are here 80% of the year

Ledi: exactly. So how's this going to work out?

Ase: well today he called me telling me about a

possibility of him moving to Durban... they just need to finalize the deal first and then he'll be here in 2 months' time

Me: you must be excited

Ase: I don't know... I don't even know if I'm ready for a relationship. Like the things you guys go through and stuff scare me, I don't think I'd be strong enough for those relationship problems and the drama they come with

Me: if you like him and he likes you back, the problems and drama won't matter

Ledi: someone's become an expert in dating...
We thank God for Melokuhle Bess!

We all laughed. Naledi could be dramatic when she wanted to. I mean was that really necessary

Me: shut up! What about you? Where's Mr. Porsche?

She took a deep breath in and then out... she smiled

Ledi: Mr. Porsche is moving to SA. He'll handle his business from this side and visit the states every now and then

Me: you kidding me

She was all smiles. My friend was in love with this guy. Who would have thought? I was happy for her, I was happy that she was happy. We continued chatting about boys, shoes and fashion. As we were busy chatting I got a text from my lecturer telling me that this other hot shot street artist from Joburg named Taylor Meier... my favorite artist by the way... the reason I am even doing the course I am doing has asked to feature my art in his exhibition taking place next week Saturday. I literally screamed.

Ase: and then?

I gave her my phone. And her and Ledi both read the message

Her: "I just got off the phone with Mr. Taylor

Meier's assistant and she told me that he would like to feature some of your pieces on his exhibition next week Saturday... you game?"

She was reading the text out loud. Ledi screamed when she was done reading

Her: who is Taylor Meier again?

Ledi: Missy's favorite artist

Me: only the best Artist that's ever walked on this earth! He's been everywhere around the world; his art is sold everywhere! He is my reason for taking up art. And he wasn't to feature my work. Flip!

Ase: congratz

Ledi: of cause I'm your date for the exhibition

Me: I have a boyfriend

Ase: who is on bed rest for the nest 6 weeks

The thought of going to an exhibition without Melo sucked. I wouldn't say he was an art

person but he had a great eye and I would have loved to have him right next to me. this was a great opportunity for me to grow because then my work would probably make its way to the states which mean moola and recognition from all over the world. I was excited and scared. I took my phone from the table to call my lecturer, it's the same lecturer who hooked me up with the 21st birthday gig. She answered.

//Her: I take it you game?

Me: hell yeah! Where's my invitation?

Her: I emailed it to you sweetie

Me: how'd you pull this one off?

Her: I received an email saying that he was hosting an exhibition this coming next weekend and he wants to help a young artist reach their dreams by showcasing their art at his exhibition so I sent him your portfolio and he responded today... so email me another portfolio with some of your stuff from over the holidays

Me: what kind thou?

Her: your best work. I don't mean paintings; I mean your best pictures you captured... be it friends or family or whatever. Just your best pieces

Me: uhhhm ok I'll email it to you when I get to my pc. Thank you so much

Her: don't thank me just yet. Thank me by accepting his scholarship

Me: wait what?

Her: you get a scholarship to go finish your studies overseas, everything will be sorted for you. All you need to do is sign and then you'll be off

Me: uhhm I don't know what to say

Her: sleep on it ok. For now, enjoy whatever you were doing and send me these pictures

Me: will do. Again thank you for considering me

Her: you one of my best students Yandiswa and this is a great opportunity for you

Me: thank you so much.

Her: have a great day now. Bye

Me: thanks, you too. Bye//

I had mixed emotions. I didn't know whether to scream or cry or what... it was exciting news but where did this leave Melo and I if I go study in the states?

Ledi: is everything ok?

Me: the exhibition comes with a scholarship to study abroad...

.

.

<3

[10/07, 20:25] Wadz: *WITH PAIN COMES LOVE*

.

.

FINALE - 50 – Melo

Finally, breakfast was served, Iya didn't eat. She went to help out her ex with his mother's funeral arrangements... well I suggested that she helps since she and that woman got along all too well and mom backed me up. We were sitting there in the lounge, just me and my mom bonding if you can call it that. Dad was at work, men like him don't take holidays. A while later Aunt Jen came in, didn't even know she was in town. You can never keep up with that one eye. She greeted us all

Her: I didn't know you were this bad

Me: I'm on bed rest for 6 flipping weeks' dude. How am I supposed to survive?

Mom: you surviving now, aren't you?

Jen: the kid doesn't mean that... at least it's still functioning

Me: she respects mom and dad too damn much.
She would never agree to it under their roof

Jen: OUCH! You really got yourself an Amahle
here

Me: tell me about it

Mom: it's a good thing!

Jen: whatever... you never knew how to live
anyway

Mom: why the shade? I'm friends with you
aren't I? that counts as living

Jen: you have a point. Ahhh but my friend you
have lived ey... remember when you beat the
shiit out of Aya?

She said laughing. Trust Aunt Jen to make fun
out of such, Aya died and Jen and her weren't
buddies even thou they shared a bestie. It was
weird really but they never got along

Mom: I was pissed okay. Besides, it's wrong to
speak ill of the dead

Jen: I aint speaking ill of Aya, I'm just laughing at how I missed seeing you beat the shiit out of her because my brother decided he was tired of being able to walk on his own

Jen's brother, aka Dad's Best friend Andrew had an accident years back and it ruined his spinal cord making him get an artificial one. As much as the spinal cord is doing its job, he's still not able to do other things he was able too.

Mom: it was not a choice. Anyway what brings you here?

Jen: my ex f*ck buddy has an exhibition next week so I'm here to attend that

Mom: which one? There's too many of them?

Jen: Taylor Meier. From Joburg, the street artist and now the world's best artist

Me: you know Taylor Meier? What am I even asking? Of cause you know the guy. My girlfriend worships him!

Jen: he sent me tickets to his exhibition, he'll be featuring one lucky student's pictures and that lucky student gets an opportunity to study abroad. Did your girlfriend send in her portfolio? This week Monday was the last day to send it in.

Me: I don't even think she knew. Too much has happened this past holiday. So where can one buy the tickets?

Jen: probably on computicket... I don't know really, they were delivered to my place the other day

Mom: woah tiger... slow down. You on Bed rest

Me: mom I have to go; I have to take Yaya to meet him

Mom: you haven't healed properly Melokuhle!

Jen: come on Amahle don't be a spoil sport. Let the kids be. I'll hook you up with tickets

Me: I could kiss you right now

Mom: you not having your own children is really

starting to get to me!

Jen: it's just going to be for a little while

Mom: Derrick broke a bone ok. That's why it is still painful for him to stand or walk, if the doctor says he should be on bed rest then he should. His injuries aren't just minor, they are serious Jennifer

Me: mom come on. I'm not 5, you can't keep dictating what I can and cannot do

Her: you under my roof now and you do as I say. You not going to Joburg until you all better

With that she walked out and left me with Jen who just shrugged. I don't understand why mom was being like this all of a sudden.

.

.

-Amahle

Many might think I'm the worst mom right now

but I almost lost my son a few days ago. I've lost way too many people in my life and I'm not ready to add him to that list too. Yes, he's just going to an exhibition which will be for a day or two and then come back, I get that, but what if something happens on his way there or on his way back huh? Then what? My parents died in a car crash, my grandparents also died in a car crash, I almost lost my son to the same, the last thing I want is this. Flying on its own is also not safe. After my in-laws died in a plane crash it was hard for me to fly again, I kept having flashbacks of when the plane went down, the scream from Lilly in the restroom, my father in law telling me to hold on and that everything was going to be fine when really nothing was going to be fine because he's not here today, I lost my child that day. Nothing is more scaring than a miscarriage, in my case this is both figuratively and literally because I still have the scar where that piece of metal went through on

my stomach. It's a constant reminder of the day I lost my in-laws and child I didn't even know was growing inside of me. Its been years but I'm still not over it, yes I do fly but it doesn't mean I'm over everything that happened. Even driving on its own is still a traumatic experience for me so no. I can't have Melo going anywhere until he is fully recovered. All my life I've lived for my kids because I've come to learn that life is too short. I'm this over protective boring mom because I'm scared to lose them, I'm scared that if I were to lose any of them, I doubt I'd ever function again. I was in my room standing by the balcony when I felt someone touch my shoulder and wipe away a tear from my cheeks. I didn't even know I was crying. It was Jen

Her: what were you thinking about?

Me: everything that's happened in the past years. The pain my family and I have endured over the years

Her: you scared that Melo will die the same way your parents and your grandparents died

I nodded involuntary.

Me: I almost lost him Jen. I can't imagine losing my son too after all the people I've lost

She pulled me in for a hug. I was now in tears

Her: you not going to lose him Babe. Its ok to worry, its ok to be scared but Melo is not going anywhere any time soon. I will be there to make sure that he takes it easy. And we will be back straight after the exhibition.

I got out of her arms

Her: I understand your pain; I was there through it all. Your children have become my children and I would never put them in harm's way. Let Melo go with me to the exhibition and I swear on my life that nothing will happen to him.

Please

I trusted Jen with the kids, she was like a

second mother to them and knowing her, she meant every word. Yes, she was a bit lenient on them but she was still motherly and did what was best for them. I nodded.

Me: please Jen.

Her: I promise. Besides, he has that girl right?

Me: yes...

Her: if Yaya really is like you then you can best believe that your baby will be well taken care off.

I smiled thinking about what an amazing person that child was. Now I know she wasn't all innocent but she was a good person. Melo was not a troubled child as per say but he has been through a lot, when I found out about my parents I was with him, he held himself together for me, he only cried on the day of their funeral. Melo and I have always been buddies... if I can use that word, I know things about him even his father doesn't know, like him losing the one girl he ever really loved to suicide. I didn't think

Melo could find love after her but life proved us otherwise. The pain Melo has been through was not for nothing, it came with Love. Yandiswa is love. And I hope and pray every day that they end up together and hopefully not face some of the challenges I faced with my husband.

Me: that child is a blessing

Jen: your smile says it all. Come let's go tell Melo the good news.

We walked out of my room in a much lighter mood.

.

.

-Melo

Thanks to Aunt Jen, mom was ok with me going to Joburg with her next week. As for Yaya, I wanted this to be a surprise. My sister came back and turns out that they had lots of fun with Ledi who rocked up at their breakfast/lunch

thingy. Yaya called me after the dinner with her newly founded family and she slept there apparently. It was Friday and Kate was going to Marie stopes. I woke up nervous as if I'm the one who's going to spread my legs in front of some doctor and have them suck the life growing inside of me. I called her but she wouldn't answer any of my calls, I needed to know if she was ok or not. Eventually I gave up and tried to sleep but I couldn't so I got on WhatsApp and had some chats with a few people. I got a call from Yaya.

//Me: morning beautiful

Her: morning sexy. How are you?

Me: nervous... how are you?

Her: I'm ok.... Have you called Kate?

Me: she's not answering my calls... probably thinks I'll try and convince her not to go through with it

Her: I'm sorry you going through this

Me: I'm a big boy. these things happen

Her: I guess

Me: so what's bothering you?

Her: nothing's bothering me

Me: don't lie to me. how was the dinner?

Her: it went great actually. His wife is an amazing woman

Me: what about him?

She clicked her tongue

Me: what is it?

Her: he told me to keep my distance from you. Says you not right for me and that I should get with someone from the church

Me: and what did you say?

Her: I lost it. Told him he can't just rock up in my life and think he's going to play father on me

when he hasn't done that for 19 years. I basically told him where to get off

Me: so you think I'm right for you?

Her: of cause you are. I wouldn't be with you if you weren't

I felt my cheeks getting red. This girl was making me blush.

Me: riiight

Her: babe

Me: yeah

Her: if you were offered a better job somewhere outside South Africa, would you take it?

Me: my whole life is here. There's a lot I'd have to consider first but I think I would take it. It's an opportunity to grow... but my girl would have to be by my side

Her: but she has school

Me: we can get her a school there... it's no

problem mos

Her: I hear you

Me: why do you ask?

Her: nah its nothing. My friends and I were just chatting about what would happen if your left SA, where would it leave our relationship

Me: it's not about the distance, it's about two people who love each other. If you and I are meant for each other, not even distance can stand in the way of what is meant to be

Her: ok I hear you babe

Me: you sure you ok?

Her: of cause, I'm just worked up but what my father said that's all

Me: I'm sorry

Her: its ok babe. Anyway let me go and wash... I will see you later on ok

Me: ok babe. Bye//

With that I dropped the call and continued chatting with people on WhatsApp. A while later my sister came in my room chatting. She was going to meet Kate who was going to give her my card after. I headed to the lounge after washing and turned on the TV, Yana walked in.

Me: how you feeling?

Her: like a bus ran over me.

Me: I'm sorry

Her: its ok

Me: so how are the plans?

Her: everything is sorted; he didn't really need my help much. Today we going grocery shopping

Me: Yana

Her: yes

Me: would you two get back together given the chance?

Her: I don't know. At this point there's no telling. I'm just worried about him that's all

Me: but the guy loves you

Her: and I'm not in love with him. I just care about him; I think I was with him because he saved me you know. He was there when I thought I had no one

Me: even though you had us

Her: yes, I did but your mother didn't die giving birth to you, she didn't seduce your father because she was jealous of her best friend

Me: yes, but a beautiful thang came out of it all.

She smiled

Her: I guess

Me: you are our sister despite everything that happened in the past. Wait, what's all this got to do with you and Ngawo?

She laughed and so did... just then mom walked

in fuming.

Yana: and then?

Her: where's Asemahle?

Me: she went to fetch something in town... why?

Mom: and that something happens to be at Marie stopes right? Derrick is your sister pregnant?

Shiiit!

.

.

<3

Meet you guys when we reach 400 likes. I love you all. The journey has been amazing.